

Printed for Andrew Lloyd &  
Sons, Dragon in Paul Church  
M. DC. LIX

M. DC. LX

BELIEVER.

TREATISE

Books published by Mr. Thomas  
Shepard.

1. The Sincere Convert.

2. The Sound Believer.

3. A Treatise of Liturgies, power  
of the Keys, and of the  
Catholique visible Church.

M. 18. 11.

LONDON.

Printed for Andrew Baskin at the  
Sign of the Anchor in St. Dunstons Church  
M. D. C. L. I. X.



To his dear Friend,  
Mr. W. Greenhill.

SIR,

**M**Any Struglings I have had  
about publishing these Notes:  
I have looked up to God, and  
at last been perswaded upon  
these grounds.

1. The many desires both of Friends  
and strangers, both by private Speeches  
and Letters; which I thought might be  
the voice of Christ:

2. Some good (as I hear) those which  
are already out have done, and which  
the rest might do, which I have looked on  
as a testimonie of the Lords acceptance of  
them.

3. I knew not what the Lords mean-  
ing should be, to bring to light by his pro-  
vidence, without my privacy, knowledge,  
or will, the former part, unless it was

to awaken and enforce me (being desired)  
to publish the rest: our works I thought  
should resemble Gods works, not to be less  
imperfect.

4. I considered my weak body and my  
short time of sojourning here, and that I  
shall not speak long to children, friends,  
or Gods precious people, I am sure not  
to many in England, to whom I owe al-  
most my whole self, whom I shall see in  
this World no more; I have been therefore  
willing to get the Wind, and take the sea-  
son, that I might leave some part of Gods  
precious Truth on record, that it might  
speak (Oh that it might be to the hearts!  
among whom I cannot (and when I sha-  
not) be. I account it a part of Gods in-  
finite Grace to make me an Instrument  
of the least good. If the Lord shall  
far accept of me in publishing these  
things, it is all that I would desire; I  
not, yet I have desired forgiveness in the  
blood of his Son, for what ever errors or  
weaknesses may be in it, or are in my self,  
which may hinder success, and frustrate  
its end; only what I have in much weak-  
ness believed, I have written and sent  
unto you, leaving it wholly with your self

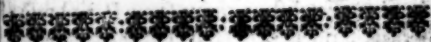
whom I much love and honour, that you  
would add or detract any thing you see  
meet (so as it be not cross to what I have  
writ) and if you then think it meet for  
publique view, you see upon what grounds  
I am content with it; but if you shall bu-  
ry it, and put it to perpetual silence, it  
shall be most pleasing to him who thinks  
more meanly of it then others can.

Tho. Shepard.



A 3

THE



The Sound  
**BELIEVER.**

CHAP. I.

*As the great cause of the eternal perdition of men is of themselves; so the only cause of the actual deliverance and salvation of man, is JESUS CHRIST: view this Text, Hoseah 13. 9. Oh Israel thou hast destroyed thy self, but in me is thy help.*

SECT. I.



Hese words as they are set down in the Hebrew, are (according to the stile of this Prophet) very short and sententious, and therefore difficult to translate into English without some Periphrasis, but the sense is here truly exprest, *In me is thy help*; which you may see confirmed from verse 4. *There is no Saviour besides me*, and verse 14. *I will ransom them from the power of the grave, O death I will be thy plagues, O*

grave I will be thy destruction; suppose the Prophet should speak here of temporal salvation, help and ransom (which he doth not) yet the argument is strong; if there be no Saviour from temporal wo and misery but only the Lord Jesus, how much more is there from woes eternal? only understand me here aright; I am not now speaking of mans deliverance and salvation, by price, in way of satisfaction to Justice (for that I have already handled) but of his deliverance and salvation by power; not of mans purchased deliverance, which is by the blood of Christ, but of mans actual deliverance, which is by the efficacy and power of the Spirit of Christ. Some Captives among men are redeemed by price only, some by power without price; but such is the lamentable captivity of all men under the severity of justice and power of sin, that without the price of *Christs blood*, Ephes. 1. 7. and the power of *Christs spirit*, Job. 8. 36. there is no deliverance; the Lord Jesus having paid the price for our deliverance. Yet it is with us as with a company of Captives in Prison; our sins like strong chains hold us, Satan our keeper will not let us go, the prison doors through unbelief are shut upon us, Rom. 11. 32. and thereby God and Christ are kept out from us; what power now can rescue us, that are held fast under such a power, even after the price is paid? Truly it can be no other but that in my Text, *In me is thy help*.

See the  
Sincere  
Convert.

When our ranfome is paid, the Lord will  
 come himfelf and fetch us out by his  
 hand, *Iſa. 53. 1. To whom is the Arm of  
 the Lord revealed?* Truly to every man yet to  
 ſome it is; and certainly look, as they who  
 make Chriſt no Saviour. Indeed, who deny  
 his ſalvation by price and ſatisfaction, ſo  
 thoſe alſo make him an imperfect Saviour,  
 who deny ſalvation and actual deliverance  
 of man to be only the Almighty arm and  
 efficacy of his Spirit and Power: an excellent  
 therefore is the ſpeech of the Apoſtle, *Acts*  
*5. 30, 31. God hath exalted Jeſus, to give*  
*repentance and remiſſion of ſins to Iſrael.*  
 Look as Jeſus was abuſed to purchaſe, re-  
 pentance and remiſſion, ſo he is now ex-  
 alted actually, to give and apply repentance  
 and remiſſion of ſins. Whoſe glory is it to  
 remit ſins, but Gods in Chriſt, and by Chriſt  
 only? Whoſe glory is it to give repentance  
 (which in this place comprehends the work  
 of converſion and faith, as *Beza* obſerves)  
 whereby we apply remiſſion, but the ſame  
 God only? The one is as difficult to be con-  
 veyed as the other, and we ſtand in as much  
 need of Chriſt to do the one as the other;  
 all the power of Chriſt exalted is little e-  
 nough to give us repentance and remiſſion;  
 the condition of the Covenant expreſſed in  
 repentance, and the bleſſings in the Cove-  
 nant, ſummed up in the forgiveness of ſins;  
 the *Socinians* deny redemption and ſalvati-  
 on by price; the *Arminians* by Chriſts  
 Power.

Power, leaving nothing visible in him, but  
the power of conversion to the power and  
liberty of the will of man. The converted  
generation that are the fruit of this power  
are the cords of their conversion. I shall  
here speak only to the generation which is  
the principal and most profitable, and shall  
show that it is not by the power of the  
law, but by the power of the Gospel.

How doth Christ redeem and save us by  
his power, out of that miserable estate, and  
consequently what is the way for us to seek  
and so to find and feel deliverance by the  
hand of Christ's power? I shall shew that  
there are four principal means or  
causes or ways, whereby man comes into  
this miserable estate. 1. Ignorance of their own misery. 2. In-  
docility and insensibleness of the heart. 3. Unbelief  
and unbelief in their prophecies. 4. Presumption  
in relying on the mercy of God by a false  
of their own forgiving, so on the contrary there  
is a fourfold act of Christ's power, whereby  
he rescues and delivers all his out of this  
miserable estate.

The first Act or stroke is *Conviction of sin*.

The second is *Compassion for sin*.

The third is *Humiliation or self-abasement*.

The fourth is *Faith*. All which are  
finally put forth (when he ceaseth ex-  
ordinarily to work) in the day of Christ's  
power, and so ever look for actual salvation  
and redemption from Christ, let them seek

for mercy and deliverance in this way, out of which they shall never find it; let them begin at conviction, and desire the Lord to let them see their sins, that so being affected with them and humbled under them, they may by faith be enabled to receive Jesus Christ, and so be blessed in him. It is true Christ is applied to us nextly by faith, but faith is wrought in us in that way of conviction and sorrow for sin; no man can or will come by faith to Christ to take away his sins, unless he first see, be convicted of, and loaden with them. I confess the manner of the Spirit's work in the conversion of a sinner unto God is exceeding secret, and in many things very various; and therefore it is too great boldness to mark out all Gods footsteps herein; yet so far forth as the Lord himself tells us his work, and the manner of it in all his, we may safely resolve our selves, and so far and no further shall we proceed in the explication of these things. It is great prophaneſs not to search into the works of common providence, though secret and hidden, *Pſal.* 28. 5. and 92. 6. much greater is it not to do thus unto Gods work of special favour and grace upon his chosen.

I shall therefore begin with the first stroak, Christs power, which is conviction of sin.

SECT.



## SECT. II.

*The first Act of Christs power, which is Conviction of sin.*

**N**OW for the more distinct explication of this, I shall open to you these four things.

1. I shall prove that the Lord Christ by his Spirit begins the actual deliverance of his Elect here.

2. What is that sin the Lord convinceth the soul thus first of?

3. How the Lord doth it?

4. What measure and degree of Conviction he works thus in all his?

1. For the first, it is said, *John 16. 8, 9*; that the first thing that the Spirit doth when he comes to make the Apostles Ministry effectual, is this, it shall *reprove or convince the world of sin*: It doth not first work faith, but convinceth them that they have no faith, as in verse 9. and consequently under the guilt and dominion of their sin; and after this he *convinceth of righteousness*, which faith apprehends, *v. 10*. It is true that the word *conviction* here is of a large extent and includes compunction and humiliation for sin; yet our Saviour wraps them up in this word, because conviction is the first, and therefore the chief in order; here the Lord not speaking now of ineffectual but effectual, and thorough conviction, expressed in deep

deep sorrow and humiliation. Now the Text saith, the Lord begins thus, not with some one or two, but with the *world* of Gods Elest, who are to be called home by the Ministry of Gods Word; which our Saviour speaks (as any may see who considers the scope) purposely to comfort the hearts of his Disciples, that their Ministry shall be thus effectual to the world of Jews and Gentiles; and therefore cannot speak of such *conviction* as serves only for to leave men without excuse, for greater condemnation; (as some understand the place) for that is a poor ground of consolation to their sad hearts.

Secondly, I shall hereafter proove, that there can be no faith without sense of sin and misery; and now there can be no sense of sin without a precedent sight or conviction of sin; no man can feel sin, unless he doth first see it; what the eye sees not, the heart rues not. Let the greatest evil befall a man, suppose the burning of his house, the death of his Children, if he doth not first know, see and hear of it, he will never take it to heart, it will never trouble him; so let a poor sinner lye under the greatest guilt, the sorest wrath of God, it will never trouble him untill he sees it and be convinced of it, *Acts 2. 37. When they heard this, they were pricked*; but first they heard it, and saw their sin, before their hearts were wounded for it, *Gen. 3. 7. they first*

first saw their nakedness, before they were ashamed of it.

Thirdly, The main end of the Law is to drive us to Christ, *Rom. 10: 4.* If Christ be the end of the Law, then the Law is the means subservient to that end, and that not to some, but to all that believe; now the Law though it drives us to Christ by condemnation, yet in order it begins with accusation. It first accuseth and so convinceth of sin, *Rom. 3. 20.* and then condemneth. Its folly and injustice for a Judge to condemn and bring a sinner out to his execution, before accusation and conviction; and is it wisdom or justice in the Lord of his Law to do otherwise? and therefore the Spirit in making use of the Law for this end, first convinceth, as it first accuseth, and lays our sins to our charge.

Lastly, Look as Satan when he binds up a sinner in his sin, he first keeps him (if possible) from the very sight and knowledge of it; because so long as they see it not, this ignorance is the cause of all their wo, why they feel it not, why they desire not to come out of it; the Lord Jesus (who came to untie the knots of Satan, *1 Joh. 3: 8.*) begins here, and first convinceth his, and makes them see their sin, that so they may feel it, and come to him for deliverance out of it. Oh consider this all you that dream out your time in minding only things before your feet, never thinking on the evils  
of

of your own hearts ; you that heed not, you that will not see your sins, nor so much as ask this question , What have I done ? What do I do ? How do I live ? What will become of me ? What will be the end of these my foolish courses ? I tell you if ever the Lord save you, he will make you see what now you cannot, what now you will not ; he will not only make you to confess you are sinners, but he will convince you of sin ; this shall be the first thing the Lord will do with thee.

*Quest.*

But you will say, What is that sin which the Lord first convinceth of ? which is the second thing to be opened.

*Ans.*

*Con. 1.*

I Answer, In these three Conclusions.

The Lord Jesus by his Spirit doth not only convince the soul in general, that it is a sinner and sinful ; but the Lord brings in a convicting evidence of the particulars ; the first is learned more by tradition (in these days) by report and acknowledgment of every man, rather then by any special act of conviction of the Spirit of Christ ; for what man is there almost, but lyes under this confession, that he is a sinner ? The best say they are sinners ; *And if we say we have no sin, we deceive our selves ; and, I know I am a sinner ;* but that which the Spirit principally convinceth of, is some sin or sins in particular : The Spirit doth not arrest men for offences in general, but opens the Writ, and shews the particular cause, the particu-

lar

lar sins, *Rom. 3. 9. We have proved, saith the Apostle, that Jews and Gentiles are under sin; but how doth the Apostle (being now the Instrument of the Spirit, in this work of conviction) convince them of this? mark his method, vers. 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. wherein you shall see it is done by enumeration of particulars; sins of their natures, there is none righteous; sins of their minds, none understandeth; sins in their wills and affection, none seek after God; sins in their lives, all gone out of the way; sins of omission of good duties, there is none that doth good; their thrones, tongues, lips, are Sepulchres, deceitful, poisonous; their mouths full of cursing, their feet swift to shed blood, &c. And this is the state of you Jews (v. 19.) as well as of the Gentiles, that all flesh may stand convinced as guilty before God.*

Rom. 3.

If it be here demanded, What are those particular sins which the Lord convinceth men of?

Quest.

I answer, In variety of men, there is much variety of special sins, as there is of dispositions, tempers, and temptations; and therefore the Lord doth not convince one man at first of the same sins of which he doth another man; yet this we may safely say, usually (though not alway) the Lord begins with the remembrance and consideration of some one great, if not a mans special and most beloved sin; and thereby the Spirit

Ans.

What those particular sins are which the Lord convinces men of in their conversion.

Spirit

Spirit discovers gradually all the rest: The arrow which woundeth the heart of Christ most, the Lord makes it fall first upon the head of the sinner, that did shoot it against Heaven, and convinceeth, and as it were hit him first with that: How did the Spirit convince those 3000. those patterns of God converting Grace? *Act. 2. 37.* Did not the Lord begin with them for one principal sin, viz. their murder and contempt of Christ, by embrewing their hands in his blood? There is no question, but now they remembered other sinful practises, but this was the *Imprimis*, which was ever accompanied with many other *Items*, which are then read in Gods bill of reckonings, where the first is set down. *Israel would have a King. 1 Sam. 8. 19.* Samuel for a time could not convince them of their sin; herein what doth the Lord do? Surely he will convince them of sin before he leaves them, and this he doth by such a terrible thunder as made all their hearts ake; and how is it now? what sin do they now see? they first see the greatness of that particular sin; but it came not to mind alone, but they cried out *1 Sam. 12. 19. We have added unto all our evils this, in asking to our selves a King.* Look upon the woman of *Samaritan. Job. 42.* The Lord Christ indeed spake first unto her about himself the substance of the Gospel about the worth of this breath of life; but what good did she get, until the Lord began

E. 10. 1

7-2

7-3

10. 1. 1. 1.

10. 1. 1. 1.  
10. 1. 1. 1.  
10. 1. 1. 1.  
10. 1. 1. 1.  
10. 1. 1. 1.  
10. 1. 1. 1.

to convince her of sin? and how doth he that? he tells her of her secret whoredom in she lived in, *the man that she now had was not her husband*; and upon the discovery of this she saw many more sins; and hence v. 29. she cries out, *Come see the man that hath told me all that ever I did in my life.* And thus the Lord deals at this day; the Minister preacheth against one sin, it may be whoredom, ignorance, contempt of the Gospel, neglect of secret duties, lying, Sabbath-breaking, &c. This is thy case, saith the Spirit unto the Soul, remember the time; the place, the persons with whom thou livedst in this sinful condition; and now a man begins to go alone, and to think of all his former courses; how exceeding evil they have been; it may be the Lord brings upon a man a sore affliction, and when he is in chains crying out of that, the Lord saith to him as to those, *Jer. 30. 15. Why criest thou for thy affliction? for the multitude of thine iniquities I have done this.* It may be the Lord sometimes strikes a mans companion in sin dead, by some fearful Judgement; and then that particular sin comes to mind, and the Lord reveals it armed with multitude of many other sins, the causes of it, the fruits and effects of it: As a Father whips a child upon occasion of one special fault, but then tells him of many more which he winked at before this, and saith, Now firrah remember such a time, such a

froward fit, such undutiful behaviour, such a reviling word you spake, such a time I called, and you ran away and would not hear me, and you thought I liked well enough of these ways, but now know that I will not pass them by, &c. Thus the Lord deals with his; and hence it is many times that the Elect of God civilly brought up, do hereupon think well of themselves, and so remain long unconvinced of their woful estate, the Lord suffers them to fall into some foul, secret or open sin; and by this the Lord takes special occasion of working conviction and sorrow for sin; the Lord hereby makes them hang down the head, and cry, *unclean, unclean*: Paul was civilly educated, he turned at last a hot Persecutor, oppressor, blasphemer; the Lord first convinced him of his persecution, and cried out from heaven to him, *Paul, Paul, why persecutest thou me?* this struck him to the heart, and then *sin revived*, *Rom. 7. 9.* many secret sins of his heart were discovered, which I take to begin and continue in special in those three days, *Acts 3. 9.* wherein he was blind, and did (through sight of sin and sorrow of heart) neither eat nor drink. As a man that hath the Plague, not knowing the disease, he hopes to live; but when he sees the spots and tokens of death upon his wrist, now he cries out, because convinced that the Plague of the Lord is upon him: So when men see some one of



more special sins break out, now they are convinced of their lamentable condition; yet it is not alway (though usually) thus; for some men the Lord may first convince of sin, by shewing them the sinfulness of their own hearts and ways; the Lord may let a man see his blindness, his extreame hardness of heart, his weakness, his wilfulness, his heartlessness, he cannot pray, or look up to God, and this may first convince him; or that all that he doth is sinful, being out of Christ; the Lord may suddenly let him see the deceits of his own heart, and the secret sinful practises of his life; as if some had told the Minister, or as if he spake to none but him; that he is forced to fall down, being thus convinced, and to confess, *God is in this man*, 1 Cor. 14. 25. *Nicodemus* may first see and be convinced of the want of Regeneration, and thereby feel his need of Christ; the Lord may set a man upon the consideration of all his life past, how wickedly it hath been spent; and so not one, but a multitude of iniquities compass him about; a man may see the godly examples of his parents, or other godly Christians, in the family or town where he dwells, and by this be convinced, that if their state and way be good, his own (so far unlike it) must needs be stark naught: the Lord ever convinceth the Soul of sins in particular; but he doth not alway convince one man of the same particular sins at

first as he doth another, whether the Lord convinceth all the Elect at first of the sin of their nature, and shew them their original sin; in and about this first stroak of conviction, I doubt not of it: *Paul* would have been alive, and a proud Pharisee still, if the Lord had not let him by the Law see this sin. *Rom. 7. 9.* and so would all men in the world, if this should not be revealed first or last, in a lesser or greater measure, under a distinct or more indistinct notion; and hence arise those confessions of the Saints, I never thought I had such a vile heart, if all the world had told me I could not have believed them, but that the Lord hath made me feel it, and see it at last; was there ever such a sinner (at least in heart, which is continually opposing of him) whom the Lord at any time received to mercy, as I am?

Con. 2.

2. The Lord Jesus by his Spirit doth not only convince the soul of its sin in particular, but also of the evil, even the exceeding great evil of those particular sins. The Lord Jesus doth not only convince of the evil of *sin*, but of the great evil of *sin*. Oh thou wretch, saith the Spirit (as the Lord to *Cain Gen. 4. 10.*) what hast thou done, whose sins cry to heaven, who hast thus long lived with God, and done this infinite wrong to an infinite God, for which thou canst never make him amends! That God who could have long since cut thee off in the midst of thy

thy sins and wickedness, and crusht thee like a moth, and sent thee down to those eternal flames, where thou now see'st some better then thy self mourning day and night, but yet hath spared thee out of his meer pity to thee; that God hast thou resisted and forsaken all thy life time; and therefore now see and consider what an evil and bitter thing it is, thus to live as thou hast done, *Jer. 2. 19.* Look as it is in the ways of holiness, many a man void of the Spirit may see and know them in the literal expressions of them, but cannot see the glory of them but by the Spirit, and hence it is, he doth not esteem and prize them and the knowledg of them above gold: So in the ways of unholiness, many a man void of the spirit of conviction of sin, may and doth see many particular sins, and confess them, but he doth not, cannot see the exceeding evil of them, and thence it is, though he doth see them, yet he doth not much dislike them, because he sees no great hurt or evil in them, but makes a light matter of them; and therefore when the Spirit comes, it lets him see and stand convinced of the exceeding greatness of the evil that is in them, *Joh. 36. 8, 9.* In the time of affliction (which is usually the time of conviction of a wild untuly sinner) *he shews them their transgressions;* but how? *that they have exceeded,* that they have been exceeding many, and exceeding vile. Oh beloved before,

before the Lord Jesus comes to convince, we have cause to pray for and pity every poor sinner, as the Lord Jesus did, saying, *Lord forgive them, they know not what they do.* You godly Parents, Masters, how oft do you instruct your children, servants, and convince them of their sinfulness, until they confess their faults? yet you see no amendment, but they go on still; what should you now do? Oh cry out for them, and say, *Lord forgive them, for they know not what they do:* Their sins they know; but what the evil of them is, alas! they know not; but when the Spirit comes to convince, he makes them see what they do, and what is the exceeding evil of those sins they made light of before; like mad men, that have sworn, and curst, and struck their friends, and when they come to be sober again, and remember their mischievous ways and words, now they see what they have done, & how abominable their courses then were. Oh you that walk on in the madness of your minds now, in all manner of sin, if ever the Lord do good to you, you shall account your ways madness and folly, and cry out, Oh Lord, what have I done in kicking thus long against the pricks?

Con. 3.

The Lord Jesus by his Spirit doth not only convince the soul of the evil of *sin*, but of the evil *after sin*, I mean of the just punishment which doth follow sin, and that is this, *viz.* that it must dy, and that eternally for

sin.

sin, if it remain in this estate it is now in, *Rom. 4. 15. The Law works wrath, i. e.* fight and sense of wrath, *Rom. 7. 9. When the Law came sin revived, and I died, i. e.* I saw my self a dead man by it; so the soul sees clearly, God hath said, *The soul that sinneth shall die*: I have sinned, and therefore if the Lord be true, I shall dye; to hell I shall, if now the Lord stop my breath, and cut off my life, which he might justly, and may easily do. *Death is the wages of sin*, even of any one sin, though never so little; what then will become of me, who stand guilty of so many, exceeding the number of the hairs on my head, or the stars in heaven? *Whoremongers and adulterers God will judge*, the Minister hath said so, the Lord himself hath told me so, *Heb. 13. 4.* I am the man, my conscience now tears me and tells me so, what will become of me? *The Lord Jesus will come in flaming fire, to render vengeance against all that know not God, and that obey not the Gospel*; This I believe, for God hath said it, *2 Thoss. 2. 7, 8, 9.* and now I see I am he that have long lived in ignorance and know not God; I have had the Gospel of Grace thus long wooing and perswading my heart, and often times it hath affected me, but yet I have resisted God and his Gospel, and have set my filthy lusts, my vain sports, my companions, cups, and queans at a higher price then Christ, and have loved them more then him;  
and

and therefore though I may be spared for a while, yet there is a time wherein Christ himself will come out against me in flaming fire. To this purpose doth the Spirit work: for beloved, the great means whereby Satan overthrew Man at first in his innocency, was this principle, although thou dost eat, and so sin against God, yet thou shalt not dye, *Gen. 3. 4. Ye shall not surely dye*; the Serpent doth not say, *Ye shall not dye*, for that is too gross an out-facing of the Word, *Gen. 2. 17.* but he saith, *Ye shall not surely dye*; that is, there is not such an absolute certainty of it; it may be you shall live, God loves you better then so, and is a more merciful Father then to be at a word and a blow. Now look, as Satan deceived and brought our first parents to ruine by suggesting this principle, so at this day he doth sow this accursed seed, and plant this very principle in the soyl of every mans heart by nature; they do not think, they cannot believe they are dead men, and condemned to dye, and that they shall dye eternally for the least sin committed by them; men nor Angels cannot perswade them of it, they cannot see the equity of it, that God so merciful, will be so severe, for so small a matter; nor yet the truth of it, for then they think no flesh should be saved; & thus when the old Serpent hath spit this poyson before them, they sup it up, and drink it in, and so thousands, nay millions of men and women

are

are utterly undone. The Lord Christ therefore when he comes to save a poor sinner, and raise him up out of his fall, convinceth the soul by his Spirit, and that with full and mighty evidence, that it shall dye for the least sin, and tells him as the Lord told *Abimelech* in another case, *Gen. 10. 3. Thou art but a dead man for this*; and if the Spirit set on this, let who can claw it off. I tell you beloved, never did poor condemned Malefactor more certainly know and hear the sentence of condemnation past upon him by a mortal man, then the guilty sinner doth his, by an immortal and displeased God; and therefore those 3000. cry out, *Act. 2. 37.*

*Men and brethren what shall we do to be saved* we are condemned to dye, what shall we do now to be saved from death? Now the soul is glad to enquire of the Minister, O tell me, what shall I do? I once thought my self in a safe and good condition as any in the Town or Country I lived in; but now the Lord hath let me hear of other news; dye I must in this estate, and 'tis a wonder of mercies I am spared alive to this day. There is not only some blind fears and suspicions that it may possibly be so, but full persuasions of heart, dye I must, dye I shall in this estate; for if the Spirit reveal sin, and convince not of death for sin, the soul under this work of conviction, being as yet rather sensual then spiritual, will make a light matter of it, when it sees no sensible danger in

in it, but when it sees the bottomless pit before it, everlasting fire before it, for the least sin, now it sees the hainous evil of sin; the way of sin though never so peaceable before, is full of danger now, wherein it sees there are endless woes, and everlasting deaths, that lye in wait for it, *Rom. 6. 21.* And now saith the Spirit, you may go on in these sinful courses as others do, if you see meet; but O consider! what will be the end of them? what it is to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season, and to be tormented for ever for them in the conclusion? for be assured that will be the end: and hence the soul seeing it self thus set apart for death, looks upon it self in a far worse estate then the brut beasts, or vilest worme upon the earth; for it thinks when they dye, there is an end of their misery; but Oh! then is the beginning of mine for ever: hence also arise those fears of death, of being suddenly cut off, that when it lies down, it trembles to think, I may never rise again, because it's convinced not only that it deserves to dye, but that it is already sentenced for to dye: hence also the soul justifies God, if he had cut him off in his sin, and wonders what kept him from it, being nothing else due from God unto it: hence lastly, the soul is stopt and stands still, goes not on in sin as before; or if it doth the Lord gives it no peace, *Jer. 8. 6.* Why doth the horse go on in the battel? because



it sees not death before it ; but now the soul sees death, and therefore stops : O remember this all you that never could believe that you are dead condemned men, and therefore are never troubled with any such thoughts in your mind ; I tell you that you are far from conviction, and therefore far from salvation: if God should send some from the dead to bear witness against this secure world concerning this truth, yet you will not believe it ; for his messengers sent from heaven are not believed herein ; woe be to you, if you remain unconvinced in this point.

But you will say, How doth the Lord thus convince sin, and wherein is it exprest ? which is the third particular.

All knowledge of sin is not conviction of sin, all confession of sin is not conviction ; there is a conviction merely rational, which is not spiritual ; there are three things in spiritual conviction.

There is a clear, certain, and manifest light, so that the soul sees its sin, and death due to it clearly and certainly ; for so the word, *Joh. 16. 9. εἰς τὴν ἀλήθειαν* signifies to evidence a thing by way of argumentation, may demonstration ; the Spirit so demonstrates these things, that it hath nothing to object, a mans mouth is stopped, he hath nothing to say but this, Beho'd I am vile, I am a dead man : for if a man have any strong arguments given him to confirm a truth,

3.

Answ.

1.

truth, yet if he have but one objection or doubtful scruple not answered, he is not fully as yet convinced, because full conviction by a clear sun-light scatters all dark objections; and hence our Saviour, *Jud. 15.* will one day convince the wicked of all their hard speeches against him, which will chiefly be done by manifesting the evil of such ways, and taking away all those colours and defences men have made for their language, before the Spirit of Christ comes, man cannot see, will not see his sin for punishment; nay, he hath many things to say for himself, as excuses and extenuations of sin; One saith, I was drawn unto it, (*the woman that thou gavest me*) and so lays the blame on others: Another saith, It is my nature; others say, All are sinners, the godly sin as well as others, and yet are saved at last, and so I hope shall I; Others profess they cannot part with sin, they would be better, but they cannot; and God requires no more than they are able to perform: Another saith, I will continue in sin but a little while, and purpose hereafter to leave it; Others say, We are sinners, but yet God is merciful and will forgive it: Another saith, Though I have sinned, yet I have some good, and am not so bad as other men; endless are these excuses for sin. In one word, I know no man though never so bad, though his sin be never so grievous, but he hath something to say for himself, and something in his mind to lessen

lessen and extenuate sin ; but beloved ,  
 when the Spirit comes to convince, he so  
 convinceth as that he answers all these ,  
 pulls down all these fences, rears of all these  
 fig-leaves, scatters all these mists, and pulls  
 off all these scales from the eyes, stops a  
 mans mouth, that the soul stands before  
 God, crying, O Lord, guilty, guilty ; as  
 the Prophet *Jeremiah* told them, *Jer. 2. 23.*  
*Why dost thou say, I am innocent ? look upon*  
*thy way, &c.* So the Spirit saith, Why dost  
 thou say thy sin is small ? it is disobedience  
 (as *Samuel* said to *Saul*, *1 Sam. 15. 23.*)  
 which is rebellion, and as the sin of witchcraft ;  
 and is that a small matter ? The Spirit of  
 conviction by the clear evidence of truth,  
 binds the understanding , that it cannot  
 struggle against God any more, and hence  
 let all the world plead to the contrary, nay,  
 let the godly come to comfort them in this  
 estate, and think and speak well of them, yet  
 they cannot beleive them, because they are  
 certain their estates are woful : hence also  
 we shall observe the soul under conviction,  
 instead of excusing sin, it aggravates sin, and  
 studies to aggravate sin ; did ever any deal  
 thus wickedly, walk thus sinfully, so long,  
 against so many checks and chidings, light  
 and love, means and mercies, as I have done ?  
 And it is wonderful to observe that those  
 things which made it once account sin light  
 make it therefore to think sin great :  
 as *gr.* my sin is little , the more  
 unkind

unkind thou (saith the Spirit) that wilt not do a small matter for the Lord: my sin is common; the more sinful thou, that in all those things wherein all the world rise up in arms against God, thou joynest with them: God spares me after sin, the greater is thy sin therefore that thou hast continued so long in, against a God so pitiful to thee; the dearest sins are now the vilest sins; because though they were most sweet to him, yet the Spirit convinceth him, they were therefore the more grievous unto the Soul of God: you poor creatures may now hide, and colour, and excuse your sins before men; but when the Lord comes to convince, you cannot lye hid; then your consciences (when Jesus Christ the Lord comes to convince) shall not be like the Steward in the Gospel, that set down 50 for 100 l. no, the Lord will force it to bring a true and clear account at that day.

a.

There is a real light in spiritual conviction; rational conviction makes things appear notionally, but spiritual conviction really; the spirit indeed useth argumentation in conviction; but it goeth further, and causeth the soul not only to see sin and death discursively, but also intuitively and really; reason can see and discourse about words and propositions, and behold things by report, and to deduct one thing from another, but the spirit makes a man see the things themselves, really wrapt up in those words: the

Spirit brings spiritual things as well as notions before a mans eye, the light of the Spirit is like the light of the Sun, it makes all things appeare as they are, *Joh. 3. 20. 21.* It was *Jerusalems* misery, she heard the words of Christ, and they were not hid from them, but *the things of her peace*, shut up in these words, *were hid from her eyes.* Discourse with many a man about his sin and misery, he will grant all that you say, and he is convinced, and his estate is most wretched, and yet still lives in all manner of sin; what is the reason of it? truly he sees his sin only by discourse, but he doth not, nay cannot see the thing sin, death, wrath of God, until the Spirit come; which only convinceth or sheweth that really. A man will not be affraid of a Lyon when it is painted only upon a wall; Why? because therein he doth not see the living Lyon; when he sees that he trembles. So men hear of sin, and talk of sin and death, and say they are most miserable in regard of both; yet their hearts tremble not, are not amased at these evils, because sin is not seen alive, death is not presented alive before them, which is done by the Spirit of conviction only, revealing these really to the soul: and hence it is that many men *in seeing see not.* How can that be? Thus, In seeing things notionally, they see them not really; and hence many that know most of sin, know least of sin, because in seeing it notionally

Luke  
19. 41.

Esa. 6. 3.

onally, they see it not really. And therefore happy were it for some men, schollers and others, that they had no notional knowledge of sin; for this *light* is their *darkness*, and makes them more incapable of spiritual conviction: The first act of spiritual conviction, is to let a man see clearly that he is sinful and most miserable: The second act is, to let the soul see really what this sin and death is. O consider of this! many of you know that you are sinful, and that you shall dye; but dost thou know what sin is? and what it is to dye? If thou didst, I dare say thy heart would sinke; if thou dost not, thou art a condemned man, because not yet convinced man. If you here ask, how the Lord makes sin real? I answer, By making God real: The real greatness of sin is seen by beholding really the greatness of God, who is smitten by sin; sin is not seen, because God is not seen, 3 *Joh.* 11. *He that doth evil hath not seen God.* No knowledge of God is the cause why blood touches blood: The Spirit casts out all other company of vain and foolish thoughts, and then God comes in and appears immediately to the soul in his greatness and glory, and then the Spirit saith, Lo, this is that God thy sin have provoked. And now sin appears as it is, and together with this real sight of sin, the soul doth not see painted fire, but see the fire of Gods wrath really; whether now it is leading, that never can be quench-

How God  
gives a  
real sight of  
sin.

Hos 4. 4.

8. 0. 1. 2.

but by Christs blood : And when the Spirit hath thus convinced, now a man begins to see his madness and folly in times past, saying, I know not what I did ; and hence questions , Can the Lord pardon such a wretch as I, whose sins are so great ? Hence also the heart begins to be affected with sin and death, because it sees them now as they are indeed, and not by report only. A man accounts it a matter of nothing to tread upon a worm, wherein there is nothing seen worthy either to be loved or feared ; and hence a mans heart is not affected with it : Before the Spirit of conviction comes, God is more vile in mans eye then any worm ; as Christ said in another case of himself, *Psal. 22. I am a worm and no man* ; so may the Lord complain, I am viler in such a ones eyes then any worm, and no God ; And hence a man makes it a matter of nothing to tread upon the glorious Majesty of God, and hence is not affected with it ; but when God is seen by the Spirit of conviction, in his great glory ; then as he is great, sin is seen great ; as his glory affects and astonisheth the soul, so sin affects the heart.

There is a constant light ; the soul sees sin and death continually before it ; Gods arrows stick fast in the soul, and cannot be plucked out ; *My sin is ever before me*, said David, (in his renewing of the work of conversion.) For in effectual conviction

the mind is not only bound to see the misery lying upon it ; but it is held bound ; it is such a Sun-light as never can be quenched, though it may be clouded. When the Spirit of Christ darts in any light to see sin, the soul would turn away from looking upon it, would not hear on that eare, *Felix-like*. But the Spirit of Conviction sent to make thorough work on the hearts of all the Elect, follows them, meets them at every turn, forceth to see and remember what they have done ; the least sin now is like a mote in the eye, its ever troubling. Those ghastly, dreadful objects of sin, death, wrath, being presented by the Spirit neer unto the soul, fix the eye to fasten here ; they that can cast off at their pleasure the remembrance and thoughts of sin and death, never prove sound until the Lord doth make them stay their thoughts, and muse deeply on what they have done, and whether they are going. And hence the soul in lying down, rising up, lies down and rises up with perplexed thoughts, What will become of me ? The Lord sometimes keeps it waking in the night season, when others are asleep, and then 'tis haunted with those thoughts, it cannot sleep, it looks back upon every day and week, Sabbath, Sermon, Prayer, Speeches, and thinks all this day, this week, &c. the goodness of the Lord and his patience to a wretch hath been continued ; but my sins also are continued ; I sin in all I do, in all



my prayers; in all I think, the same heart remains still, not humbled nor yet changed.

And hence you shall observe, that word which discovered sin at first to it, it never goes out of the mind; I think saith the soul, I shall never forget such a man, nor such a truth. Hence also if the soul grow light and careless at some time, and casts off the thoughts of these things, the Spirit returns again, and falls a reasoning with the soul, Why hast thou done this? what hurt hath the Lord done thee? will there never be an end? hast not thou gone on long enough in thy lewd courses against God, but that thou shouldest still add unto the heap? hast thou not wrath enough upon thee already? how soon may the Lord stop thy breath? and then thou knowest thou hadst better never to have been born, was there ever any that thus resisted grace, that thus adventured upon the sword point? hast thou but one friend, a patient, long-suffering God, that hath left thy conscience without excuse long ago, and therefore could have cut thee off, and dost thou thus forsake him, thus abuse him? Thus the Spirit follows: and hence the soul comes to some measure of confession of sin: O Lord, I have done exceeding wickedly, I have been worse then the horse that rusheth into the battel; because it sees not death before it; but I have seen death before me in these ways, and yet go on, and

still sin, and cannot but sin: Behold me, Lord, for I am very vile: When thus the Spirit hath let into the soul a clear, real, constant light, to see sin and death, now there is a thorough conviction.

But you will say, In what measure doth the Spirit communicate this light?

43

I shall therefore open the fourth particular, *viz.* The measure of spiritual conviction in all the Elect, *viz.* So much conviction of sin as may bring in and work compunction for sin, so much sight of sin as may bring in sense of sin, so much is necessary, and no more. Every one hath not the same measure of conviction, yet all the Elect have and must have so much: for so much conviction is necessary as may attain the end of conviction. Now the *finis proximus*, or next end of conviction in the Elect, is compunction or sense of sin; for what good can it do unto them to see sin, and not to be affected with it? What greater mercy doth the Lord shew to the Elect therein, then unto the Devils and Reprobates who stand convinced, and know they are wicked and condemned, but yet their hearts altogether unaffected with any true remorse for sin? *My eye saith Jeremiah affecteth my heart. The Lord opens the ears of his to instruction, that he might humble.* Some think that there is no thorough conviction, without some affection. I dare not say so, nor will I

now

Am. 3.

51.

ob. 33.

16. 17.

now dispute whether there is not something in the nature and essence of that conviction the Elect have, different from that conviction in Reprobates and Devils; 'tis sufficient now, and that which teacheth the end of this question, to know what measure of conviction is necessary. I conceive the clear discerning of it, is by the immediate and sensible effect of it, *viz.* so much as affects the heart truly with sin.

But if you ask, What is that sense of sin, and what measure of this is necessary? That I shall answer in the doctrine of compunction.

Let not therefore any soul be discouraged, and say I was never yet convinced, because I have not felt such a clear, real, constant light to see sin and death as others have done: Consider thou, if the end of conviction be attained, which is a true sense and feeling of sin, thou hast then that measure which is most meet for thee, more than which the Lord regards not in any of his; but you that walk up and down with convicted consciences, and know your states are miserable and sinful, and that you perish if you dye in that condition, and yet have no sense nor feeling, no sorrow, nor affliction of spirit for those evils; I tell thee, the very devils are in some respects nearer to the Kingdom of God than you be, who see, feel, and tremble; wo, wo to thousands that live under convicting Ministeries, whom the

word often hits, and the Lord by the Spirit often meets, and they hear and know their sins are many, their estates bad, and that iniquity will be their ruine, if thus they continue; yet all Gods light is without heat, and it is but the shining of it upon rocks, and cold stones; they are frozen in their dregs: be it known to you, you have not one drop of that conviction which begins salvation. Before I pass from this to the second work of Compunction, let me make a word of application.

If the Spirit begins thus with conviction of sin, then let all the Ministers of Christ co-work with Christ, and begin with their people here; be faithful Witnesses unto Gods truth, and give warning to this secure world, that the sentence of death is past, and the curse of God lies upon every man for the least sin; *Lift up thy voice like a Trumpet*, was the Lords word to *Isaiab*, *Isa.* 58. 2. *and tell them their sin*; Those Bees we call drones that have lost their sting. When *the salt of the earth* (the Ministers of Christ, *Mat.* 5.) have lost their acrimony and sharpness, or saltiness, *what is it good for but to be cast out*? our hearers will putrifie and corrupt by hearing such Doctrines only, as never search. When the Lord inflicted a grievous curse upon the people, *Ezek.* 3. 26. The Lord made *Ezekiel* dumb, that he should not be a reprover to them. What was the lamentation of *Jeremiah*?

miah? Thy Prophets have seen vain and foolish things for thee, and have not discovered thine iniquity. How would you have the Lord Jesus by his Spirit to convince men? must it must it not be by his Word? Verily you keep the Spirit of Christ from falling down upon the people, if you refuse to endeavour to convince the people by your word: Other Doctrines are sweet and necessary; but this is in the first place most necessary. Beware of personating, beware of bitterness and passion; but oh convince with a Spirit of power and compassion; and he that shall be instrumental unto Christ, in this or any other work for Christs sake, unto him the Lord will be the principal agent, and by him will attain his own ends, finish his great work, gather in his scattered sheep, who are in great multitudes throughout the Kingdom scattered from him; if once they be thoroughly convinced that they are utterly lost, and gone out of the way.

May not this also be sad reproof and terror to them that stand it out against all means of conviction, and will not see their sin, nor believe the fearful wrath of God due to them for sin; not a man scarce can be found that will come to this conclusion; I am a sinful man, and therefore I am dead, I am a condemned man; but like wilde beasts fly from their pursuers, into their holes, and thickets, and dens, their sinful

exte-

Lam. 2.

14.

Prov. 1.

23.

Hse. 2.

extenuations, excuses, and apologies for sin, and for themselves, and if they be hunted thither, and found out there, then they resist, and article against that truth which troubles them; *They flatter themselves in their own eyes, until their iniquities be found most hateful.* Many a man dislikes the Text, the Use, especially the long Use wherein his sin is toucht, and his conscience tost; especially if it be his darling sin, his *Herodias*, his *Rimmon*, especially if withal he thinks that the Minister means him, he will not see it, nor confess it, especially if he apprehends he shall lose his honour, or his *silver shrives* and *proficby* it; he will not see his sin, that he may not be troubled in conscience for his sin, that so he may not be forced to confess and forsake his sin, and condemn himself before God and men. O Lord, I mourn that I can scarce meet with a man that either cares to be, or will be convinced; but hath something a way to say for himself, their sins are not so great, they are not so bad, but have some good, and therefore have some hope; and if God be merciful, it is no great matter though they be exceeding sinful, or some such thing; their mouths are not stoppt to say nothing for themselves but guilty. There is less conviction in the world in this Age then many are aware of. For I believe that all the powers of hell conspire together to blind mens eyes and darken mens mindes in this great

great work of Christ: *Principis obsta*, it is policy to stop Christ in his entrance, in his first stroak upon the soul; but oh! little doe you think what you do herein, and what woe you work to your selves hereby; dost thou stifle and resist the first breathing of Christs Spirit, when he comes to save thee? What hurt will it be to know the woe of thy condition, now when there is hope hereby of coming out of it; who must else one day see all thy sins in order before thee to thy eternal anguish and terrour? *Psa. 50. 21.* When the Lord shall say to thee as unto *Dives*, *Remember in thy lifetime thou hadst thy good things*; Remember such a time, such a place, such a sin, which then you would not see. But now thou shalt see what it is to strike an infinite God. Remember thou wast forewarned of wrath to come, but thou wouldst not believe thy self accursed, that so thou mightest have felt thy need of him that was made a curse to bless thee; and therefore feel it now: Oh! you will wish then that you had known this evil *in that your day*. What dost thou talk of grace? thou thinkest thou hast grace, when as thou hast not the first beginning, nay, not the most remote preparation for it in this work of conviction; what should we do for such as these, but with *Jeremy*, *Jer. 13. 17.* *If you will not hear my soul shal weep in secret for your pride.*

Oh be perswaded therefore to remember

*Je 3.*

ber

ber your sins past, and to consider of your ways now. All the prophaness of thy heart, and life, all the vanity of thy youth, *Eccles. 11. 9.* all your secret sins, all your sins against light and love, checks and vows; all that time wherein thou didst nothing else but live in sin; thus Gods people have done, *Ezek. 6. 9.* thus all the Elect shall do; oh consider the Lord, *remember them all*, and that with grief of heart against thee, because thou forgettest them, *Hos. 2. 7.* He that numbers thy hairs, and tells the sparrows that fall, numbers much more thy sins that fall from thee, they are written down in his black Book. They are no trifles; for he minds not toys; the books must be opened, oh reckon now, you have yet time to call them to mind, which it may be shall not continue long; it is the Lords complaint, *Jer. 8. 6.* of a wicked generation, *that he could hear no man say, What have I done? Winnow your selves* (as the word is *Zeph. 2. 1.*) *O people not worthy to be beloved.* I pronounce unto you from the eternal God, that ere long the Lord will search out *Jerusalem* with candles, he will come with a sword in his hand, to search for all secure sinners in City and Country, unless you awaken; he will make inquisition for blood, for oaths, for whoremongers, which grow common; for all secret sins we are frozen up in; oh be willing, be but willing that the Lord should search you and convince you now in this e-



ening time of the day, before the night  
come, wherein it will be too late to say, I  
wish I had considered of my ways in time;  
of all sins, none can so hardly stand with up-  
rightness, as a secret willingness to see and  
be convinced of sin, *Job. 3. 20, 21.* The  
helps and means for attaining hereunto are  
these.

Bring thy soul to the light, desire the  
word in Prayer, as *Job* did, *What I see not,  
Lord, shew me, Job. 34. 32.* Set the glass  
of Gods Law before thee, look up in the  
ministry of the Word unto the Lord, and  
say, O Lord search me: the Sun of this holy  
Word discovers mores: on the Sabbath day  
attend to all that is spoken, as spoken unto  
thee, then examine thy self when thou hast  
measured. When *David* saw, *Psal. 19.* how  
clear the Law was, he cries out, *Who know  
his errors?*

Help. 1.

Look upon every conviction of thy con-  
science for sin; as an arrest and warning giv-  
en from the Lord himself; for sometimes  
the Word hits, and conscience startles, and  
saith, This is my sin, my condition; yet how  
foul it is then for a man to put a merry face  
upon a foul conscience? How oft do men  
think this is but the word of a man, who  
hath a latitude given him of reproving sin in  
the Pulpit, and we must give way to them  
herein? or else their hearts rise and  
well against the man and word also:  
And why is it thus? Because he thinks

Help. 2.

it is man only that speaks ; whereas did he see and believe that this was a stroke, a warning, an arrest, a check from the omnipotent God, would he then grapple think ye with him? would it pass lightly by him then? When *Eli* heard *Samuel* denounced things against his house, *It is the Lord*, said *Eli*, 1 *Sam.* 3. 18. When *Paul* saw *Jesus* speaking, *Why persecutest thou me* *Acts* 9. he falls down astonished, and dares not kick against the pricks any longer : An arrest in the Kings name comes with authority, and awes the heart of the man in debt.

## 3. Help.

Do not judge of sin by any other rule but as God judgeth of it according to the rule of the Word, by which all mens ways shall be judged at the last day. What made *Saul*, 1 *Sam.* 15. extenuate his sin to *Samuel*? he judged not of it as the Lord in his Word did; for had he done so, he would have seen disobedience to a command as bad as witchcraft, as *Samuel* told him; which all made his proud heart sink and say, *I have sinned*; remember for this end these Scriptures, *Rom.* 1. 18. *Rom.* 2. 9. *Rom.* 23. *Gal.* 3. 10. by which thou maist see either I must dye (in the state I am) or God himself must lie. Remember that an angry look, or word is murder in Gods account; a wanton eye, an unchaste thought is Adultery before a holy God; before whose Tribunal thou must give an account.

2 *Cor.* 5.  
10.

ever

every vain thought and word. And therefore do not judge of sin by the present pleasure, gain, honour, or ease in it; for this is a false rule: *Moses forsook the pleasures of sin for a season*, Heb. 11. 25. Nor yet by not feeling any punishment for it; for, *God reserves wrath*, Nah. 1. 2. *till the day of reckoning*: Nor yet by the esteem that others generally have of it, who make no more of wounding the Son of God by sin, when they do of crushing vermine under their feet: Nor yet by the practise of others; Every man sins, and therefore I hope I shall do as well as others: Nor yet seeing my self better, and thanking God thou art not as other men; it may be so, thou didst never steal, nor whore, nor murder as yet; that is not the question; but hast thou had any one vain thought in Prayer? hast thou heard one Sermon unprofitably? hast thou sinned? then know God spared not the Angels that sinned; and how wilt thou escape unless the Lord dye for thee? Nor yet hastily judge of it by thy own opinion of God, *in thinking God is like unto thee*, that is thou makest light of it, so he maketh less: *Psa. 50. 21.* Oh take heed of judging the evil of sin by any of these rules: Oh remember all men are apt to think of themselves better then they are; *Are we also blind?* say the Pharisees: take heed that by judging of sin by these false rules, you deceive not your selves.

Let

Vse. 4.

Let this lastly, be a use of thankfulness to all those whose eyes the Lord hath opened to see, and so convincing you of your sin.

1 Sam.

25. 32.

33.

When *David* was going in the heat of his Spirit to kill *Nabal*, and *Abigail* met him and stopt him, what said he? *Oh blessed be the Lord for thy counsel*; so when thou wert going on in the heat and pursuit of thy sin, toward eternal death, that the Lord should now meet thee in thy way, and convince thee of thy folly, and so stop thee, what a world of sin else wouldst thou have committed? how vile wouldst thou have been! Oh say therefore; Blessed be that Minister of the Lord, and blessed for ever be the Name of the Lord, that gave me that counsel. It is said; Christ will send the Comforter to convince of sin: Is it a comfortable thing

Joh. 16.

7.

to see sin? yes, it shall one day be matter of unspeakable comfort to you that ever you saw sin; that ever he shewed thee that mystery of iniquity in thy heart and life, those *arcana imperii*, those secrets of the power and dominion of sin over thee: *Thou shalt not hate but reprove thy brother*. If the Lord should secretly keep thy sin glowing in his own bosome against thee, and never reprove thee for it, nor convince thee of it; no greater sign of Gods everlasting hatred against thee. Oh it is infinite love, that he hath called thee aside, and dealt plainly and secretly with thee, and will you not be thankful for this? The Lord might have

Levit.

19. 17.

left

left thee in thy brutish estate, and never made known thy latter end ; never have told thee of thy sin or flood before it comes.

It may be you will say, If I felt my sin, and were deeply humbled for it, I could then be thankful that ever I saw it ; what is it to see sin ?

*Object.*

This is a favour the Lord shews not to all mankind, many have no means to bring them to the knowledg of it, and those that have, yet are smitten with a deep sleep, under those means, that they know not when death is at their dores, not what sin means ; and this it may be is the condition of some of thy poor friends and acquaintance, that think it strange that thou runnest not with them in the same way as they do.

*Ans.*

Suppose some Reprobates do see sin, yet the Lord puts a secret vertue in that work of conviction upon thee, which makes them cry to heaven for a spirit of brokenness for sin ; which without this sight of sin, thou wouldst never so much as have desired ; and this they have not.

2.

However, Conviction is a work of the Spirit, though it should be but common ; and wilt not thou be thankful for common mercy, suppose it be outward ? how much more for this that is spiritual, though it should be common ? especially considering that it is the first fundamental work of the Spirit, and is seminally all. Sense of sin begins here, and ariseth hence ;

3.

as

as ignorance of sin is seminally all sin. Remember that the discovery of *Faux* in the Vault, was the preservation of *England*; we use to remember the day and hour of the beginning of some great and notable deliverance; Oh remember this time wherein the love of Christ first brake out in convincing thee of thy sin, who else hadst certainly perished in it. And thus much of this first work of Conviction; now the second follows, Compunction.

### SECT. III.

*The second Act of Christs power in working Compunction or sense of sin.*

**C**ompunction pricking at the heart; or sense and feeling of sin, is different from conviction of sin; the latter is the work of the understanding and seated in that principally, the other is in the affections and will, and seated therein principally: A man may have sight of sin, without sorrow and sense of it, *Dan.* 5. 22. with 26. 21. *Ja.* 1. 24. *Rom.* 2. 20, 21. Yet that conviction which the Spirit works in the Elect is ever accompanied with compunction, first or last. For the better unfolding this point, let me open these four things to you.

1. That compunction or sense of sin, immediately follows conviction of sin in

the

the day of Christs power.

2. The necessity of this work to succeed the other.

3. Wherein it consists.

4. The measure of it in all the Elect.

That compunction follows conviction, is evident from Scripture and Reason, *Acts 2.*

37. *When they heard this*, that is, when they saw and were convinced of their sinne in crucifying the Lord of Life, which they did not imagine to be a sin before, what follows next? it is said, *They were pricked at the heart*: Lo, here is compunction: *Ephraim* also in turning unto God, *Jer. 31.*

19. hath these words, *After that I was instructed, I swore upon my thigh*: (as men in great calamity befallen them use to do) *I was ashamed, even confounded, because I did bear the reproach of my youth*: The men of

*Nineveh* hearing by the Prophet they were all to die within fourty days, it is said, *they believed God* (in the work of conviction) and then they fell to *sack-cloth and ashes* (in the work of compunction) which did immediately follow: *Josiah, 2 Chron.*

34. 27. in his renewed return unto God, after he heard the words of the Law, *his heart melted, and he wept before the Lord*.

For what is the end of conviction? Is it not compunction? For if the Lord should let a man see his sin, and death for sin, and yet suffer the heart to remain hard and unaffected, the Lord

i.

*Jonah 3.*

did but leave him without excuse ; nay, the Lord should but leave him under great misery, and under a more fearful judgment, viz. for a man to see and know his sin, and yet unaffected with it, and hardened under it ; hardness of heart is one of the greatest judgments ; to see sin and not to be affected with it, argues greater hardness. For it is no wonder if they that see not and know not sin, remain senseless of sin ; alas ! they know not what they do ; but for a man to be enlightened, and see his sin, and yet unaffected ; Lord, how great is this hardness, and how unexcusable will such a man be left before God, when the Lord shall reckon with him for his hardness of heart ? What is the end of that light the Lord lets into the understanding in other things ? is it not that thereby the heart might be affected thoroughly with it ? Why doth the Lord let in the light of the knowledge of Christ, and of his will ? Is it that this knowledg should like froth float in the understanding, and be imprisoned there ? No verily, but that the heart might be thoroughly and deeply affected therewith, And do you think that the Lord will in the light of conviction imprison it up in the mind ? is there not a further end, that by this light the heart might be deeply affected with sin ? if any say that the end of conviction is to drive the soul to Christ, I grant that is the remote and last end of it, but the

next



next end is compunction : For if the understanding be convinced of misery, and the heart remain hard, the mind may see indeed that righteousness and life only is to be had in Christ ; yet the heart remaining hard, the will and affection will never stir toward Christ, its impossible a hard heart, remaining thus wholly unaffected with sin and misery, should be truly affected with Jesus Christ ; but of this more hereafter.

What necessity is there of this compunction, to succeed conviction ? I speak now of necessity in way of ordinary dispensation, not of Gods usual and extraordinary way of working, where he useth neither Law nor Gospel (as ordinarily he doth) to work by. Many have been nibbling lately at this doctrine, and demanded, What need is there of sorrow and compunction of heart ? A man may be converted only by the Gospel, and God may let in sweetness and joy, without any sense of sin or misery, and in my experience I have found it so ; others godly and gracious also feel it so : Why therefore do any press such a necessity of coming in by his back door unto Christ ? This point I conceive is very weighty, and much dangerous in denying the truth of it ; yet withal there needs much tenderness in handling of it, lest any stumble ; and therefore before I lay down the reasons to shew the necessity of it, I will leave to propound these rules, both for the clearing of the point, and answering

2.  
Answ.

1 Rule.

sundry objections usually about this point. In this work of compunction, do not think that the Lord hath not wrought any true sense of sin, because you find it not in such a measure as you imagine you should desire to have, and that others feel; sense of sin admits degrees. I doubt not but *Josephs* brethren were humbled, yet *Joseph* must be more, he must be cast into the ditch, and into the Prison, and the iron must enter not only into his leggs, but into his soul, *Psal.* 105. 18. He must be more afflicted in spirit, because he was to do greater work for God, and was to be raised up higher then the rest, and therefore did need the more ballast; some were educated more civilly then others, and therefore have contracted less guilt and stoutness of heart against God and his ways, therefore these have not such cause of trouble, and being less rugged, have less need of Axes to hew them: some mens sorrow breaks upon them more suddenly, like storms and breaches of the Sea, and the Lord is resolved to hasten and finish his work in them more speedily, and it may be more exemplarily for every Christian is not a fair copie, as *thole, Act. 2. 37.* In others their sorrows flow in by degrees, *Gutta cavat lapidem*, the Lord empties them by continual droppings, and hence feel not that measure of sorrow as others do: every Christian is not a *Hem* *Psal. 88.* who suffers distracting fears

terrors from his youth up, vers. 15. who is afflicted with all Gods ways, vers. 7. for he was a man of exceeding high parts and gifts, as you may see, 1 Kings 4. 31. and therefore the Lord had need of hanging some special plummets on his heart, to keep it ever low, lest it should be lifted up above measure. Some sense of sin the Lord works in all he saves, but not the same measure; the Lord gives not alway unto his that which is good in itself (it's good I confess to be deeply affected and humbled) but that which is fit, and therefore best for thee.

Do not think there is no compunction or 2 Rule.  
sense of sin wrought in the soul, because you cannot so clearly discern and feel it, nor the time of the working and first beginning of it. I have known many that have come with complaints, they were never humbled, they never felt it so, nor yet could tell the time when it was so, yet there hath been, and many times they have seen it by the help of others spectacles, and blest God for it. When they in *Isaiah* 63. 17. complained, *Lord why hast thou hardened our hearts from thy fear?* Do you think there was no softness, nor sensibleness indeed? Yes verily, but they felt nothing but a hard heart, nay, such hardness as if the Lord had plagued them with it by his own immediate hand, and not born and bred with them only, as with other men. Many a soul

may think the Lord hath left it, nay, smitten it with a hard heart, and so make his moan of it, yet the Lord hath wrought real softness, under self hardness, as many times in Reprobates there is felt softness, when within there is real hardness: The stony-ground-hearers were ploughed and broken on the top, but were stony at the bottom. Some men may be wounded outwardly and mortally, this may easily be discerned: The Lord may wound others and they may bleed out; their sorrow is more inwardly and secret, and therefore cannot point with their finger to the wound as others can.

3 Rule.

\*Do not think the Lord works compunction in all the Elect in the same circumstantial work of the Spirit, but only in the same substantial work: the Lord works a true sense of sin for substance and truth of it, yet there are many circumstantial works, like so many enlargements and comments upon one and the same Text. *Ex gratiâ*. The same sin that affects Paul, it may be doth not affect *Lydia* or *Apollus*. The same notions for the aggravation of sin in one, do not come into the mind of the other; the same complaints, and prayers, and turnings of Spirit in the one, may not be in the same circumstances, and yet with the like affects as with the other, and yet both of them feel sin and therefore complain, they both feel sin yet by means of various apprehensions and aggravations. This I speak, because y

may the better understand the meaning of Gods servants in opening the work of humiliation. You may hear them say, the soul doth this, and thinks that, and speaks another thing ; it may be every one do not so think in the same individual circumstances, and therefore are to be understood as producing only *exemplum in re simili* ; something like this, or for the substance of this is here wrought.

In this work of compunction we must not bring rules unto men, but men to rules : 4 Rule. Crook not Gods rule to the experience of men (which is fallible, and many times corrupt) but bring men unto the rule, and try mens estates herein by that : For many will say, Some men are not humbled at all, never had any precedent sorrow for sin, Gods mercy only hath melted their hearts, and experience proves this, and many find this, who are sincere and gracious Christians.

I answer,

We are not in this, or any other point to be guided by the experience of men only, but attend the rule ; if it be proved that according unto the rule, men must be broken and affected with their sin and misery, before mercy can be truly apprehended, or Christ accepted ; What tell you me of such or such men ? let the rule stand ; but let men stand or fall according to the rule : many are accounted gracious and godly for a time, much affected with mercy and Christ Jesus ; yet

afterward fall or wizen into nothing, and prove very unsound.

What is the reason?

Truly the cause was here, their first wound and sorrow for sin was not right, as hereafter shall be made good; many thousands are miserably deceived about their estates, by this one thing, of crooking and wresting Gods rules to Christians experience; let all Gods servants tremble and be wary here; wrack not the holy Scriptures, nor force them to speak as thou feelest, but try all things by them, *1 Thes. 5. 21.*

§ Rule.

Do not make the examples of converted persons in Scripture, patterns in all things of persons unconverted; do not make Gods work upon the one, run parallel with Gods work upon the other.

Some say, that many in Scripture are converted to Christ without any sorrow for sin, and produce the examples of *Lydia*, whose heart was sweetly opened to receive Christ; and the Eunuch, *Acts 8.* converted in the same manner.

I answer.

These are examples of persons converted to God before, who did believe in the Messiah, but did not know that this *JESUS* was the Messiah, which they soon did, when the Lord sent the means to reveal Christ; and therefore *Lydia*, a Jewish proselite, is called a worshipper of God, *Act. 16. 14.* and so was the Eunuch, *Act. 8. 27.* and in the same condition

condition was the Centurion, *Act. 10, 2.*  
*who feared God, and whose prayers were accep-*  
*ted,* ver. 4. (which cannot be without faith)  
 yet did not know that this Jesus crucified  
 was the Messiah, until *Peter* came unto him.  
 So that suppose here was no sense or sorrow  
 for sin at this time; doth it therefore fol-  
 low they never had any when the Lord at  
 first wrought upon them? are these exam-  
 ples in persons converted, fit to shew forth  
 Gods work in persons unconverted? in  
 some things indeed they are examples, in  
 others not so: their examples of believing  
 in Christ, are not in that act examples of sor-  
 row for want of Christ. And yet let me add,  
 to say that God opened *Lydia's* heart to be-  
 lieve in Christ, and yet opened not her heart  
 to lament her sin and misery, in her estate  
 without Christ (suppose she were without  
 Christ) is more then can be proved from  
 the Text; for 'tis said, *Her heart was open-*  
*ed to attend unto the things that were spoken*  
*by Paul:* And can any think that *Paul* or  
 an Apostle, ever preached Christ without  
 reaching the need men had of him? and  
 could any preach their need of Christ, with-  
 out preaching mens undone and sinful estate  
 without Christ? and do you think that *Ly-*  
*dia* was not made to attend unto this? Do  
 you think that when *Philip* came to open  
 the 53. of *Isaiah* to the Eunuch, that *Christ*  
*was brased for our iniquities;* that he did  
 not let him understand the infinite evil  
 of

of sin and misery of all sinners, and of him in special, unless the Lord Jesus was bruised for him.

6 Rule.

In examples recorded in the Scripture of Gods converting grace, do not think they had no sorrow for sin, because it is not distinctly and expressly set down in all places: for the Scripture usually sets down matters very briefly; it oftentimes supposeth many things, and refers us to judge of some by other places; as *Acts 6. 7.* it is said, *Many of the Priests were obedient to the Faith;* doth it therefore follow that they did immediately believe, without any sence of sin? Look to a fuller example, *Act. 2.* and then we may see, as the one were converted to the faith, so were the other, having a hand in the same sin, *1 Tim. 1. 13, 14.* *Paul he was persecutor, but the Lord received him to mercy,* and that Gods grace was abundant in faith and love: doth it hence follow that Paul had no castings down, because not mentioned here? If we look upon *Acts*, we shall see it otherwise.

7 Rule.

Do not judge of general and common workings of the Spirit upon the souls of men to be the beginnings of effectual and special conversion; for a man may have some inward and yet common knowledge of the Gospel and Christ in it, before there be any sorrow for sin; yet it doth not hence follow that the Lord begins not with compunction and sorrow, because common work is not special.



special & effectual work; when the Spirit thus comes, he first begins here, as we shall prove.

The terrors, and fears, and sense of sin and death, be in themselves afflictions of soul, and of themselves drive from Christ; yet in the hand of Christ, by the power of the Spirit, they are made to leade, or rather drive unto Christ, which is able to turn mourning into joy, as well as after mourning to give joy; and therefore 'tis a vain thing to think there is no need of such sorrows which drive from Christ; and that Christ can work well enough therefore without them; when as by the mighty power and riches of mercy in Christ, the Lord by wounding, nay, killing his of all their carnal security and self-confidence, saves all his alive, and drives them to seek for life in the Son.

These things thus premised, let us now hear of the necessity of this work to succeed conviction.

Else a sinner will never part with his sin; a bare conviction of sin doth but light the candle to see sin; compunction burns his fingers, and that only makes him dread the fire, *Cleanse your hearts ye sinners, and purifie your hearts ye double minded men* (saith the Apostle James, cap. 4. 8.) But how should this be done? he answers, v. 9. *Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep, and turn your laughter into mourning*: So Joel 2. 12. the Prophet calls upon his hearers to turn from their sin unto the Lord;

8 Rule.

Joh. 16.  
20.

Hos. 6. 1,  
2, 3.

Reas. 2.

Lord ; but how ? *Rend your hearts and not your garments.* Not that they were able to do this, but by what sorrow he requires of all in general ; he thereby effectually works in the hearts of all the Elect in particular ; for every man naturally takes pleasure, nay, all his delight and pleasure is in nothing else but sin ; for God he hath none but that. Now so long as he takes pleasure in sin, and finds contentment by sin, , he cannot but cleave inseparably to it ; Oh 'tis sweet, and it only is sweet ! for so long the soul is dead in sin : *Pleasure in sin is death in sin*, 1 Tim. 5, 6. So long as 'tis dead in sin, it is impossible it should part with sin ; no more then a dead man can break the bonds of death. And therefore it undeniably follows, that the Lord must first put gail and wormwood to these duggs , before the soul will cease sucking , or be weaned from them ; the Load must first make sin bitter, before it will part with it , load it with sin, before it will sit down and desire ease : And look as the pleasure in sin is exceeding sweet to a sinner, so the sorrow for it must be exceeding bitter, before the soul wil part from it.

'Tis true, I confess a man sometime may part with sin without sorrow ; the unclean spirit may go out for a time, before he is taken, bound, and slain by the power of Christ: But such a kind of partaking is but the washing of the cup, 'tis unsafe and un-

sound

sound, and the end of such a Christian will be miserable ; for a man to hear of his sin and then to say, I'll do no more so, without any sense or sorrow for it, would not have been approved by *Paul*, if he had seen no more in the careless Corinthians, in tolerating the incestuous person ; but their sorrow wrought this repentance. No, the Lord abhors such whorish wiping the lips ; and therefore the same Apostle, when he reproves them for not separating the sinner, and so the sin from them, he sums it up in one word, *You have not mourned that such a one might be taken from you* : because then sin is severed truly from the soul, when sorrow or shame, some sense and feeling of the evil of it, begins it. Not only sin is opposite to God, but when the Lord Jesus first comes near his Elect in their sinful estate, they are then enemies themselves by sin unto God. And hence it is, they will never part with their weapons, until themselves be thoroughly wounded : And therefore the Lord must wound their consciences, minds, and hearts before they will cast them by. Now if there be no parting with, no separation from sin, but sin is as strong, and the sinner as vile as ever before ; hath Christ (who now comes to save his Elect from sin) the end of his work ? what is the man the better for conviction, affection to Christ, name what you can, that remains still in sins ? When the Apostle would sum up all

2 Cor. 7.  
10.

1 Cor. 5.  
2.

1 Cor. 15  
17.

Prov. 28.  
13.

Object .

Ans. w.

all the misery of men, he doth it in those words, *Ye are yet in your sins*: So say I, thou art convicted, but art yet in thy sin; art affected with Christ, and takest hold of Christ, but art yet in thy sin. *He that confesseth and forsaketh his sin, shall find mercy.*

You will say, May not the sweetness of Christ in the Gospel, and sense of mercy, separate from sin without any compunction?

I answer,

1. Sense of mercy and Christs sweetness (I conceive) serve principally to draw the soul unto Christ, *Jer. 31. 3. With loving kindness have I drawn thee.* But compunction or sense of sin principally serves in the hand of Christ, to turn the soul from sin. Aversion from sin is distinct from, and in order goes before our conversion unto God.

2. Sense of the sweetness of Gods grace in Christ keeps out sin, but it doth not thrust out sin at first.

2 Cor: 7.  
1, 2.

3. Christ cannot be effectually sweet, unless sin be first made bitter; there may be some general notice of Christs excellency, and some thirty pieces given for him; some esteem of his grace, and hope of his mercy, which may occasion sorrow; but I dare not say, that this is any sound or thorough work, till after sorrow, *Isa. 50. 4. Christ hath the tongue of the learned given him to speak a word in season: Unto whom? It is added unto the weary, They are the men that will prize*

prize mercy, and they only to purpose; they that have felt the bitterness of sin and wrath, find it exceeding hard to prize Christ, and to taste his sweetness; how shall they do it indeed that find none at all? Sweetness before sense of sin, is like Cordials before purging of a foul stomach; which usually strengthen the humor, but recover not the man.

Because without this, no man will either care for Christ, or feel a need of Christ; a man may see a want of Christ by the power of conviction, but he will never feel a need of Christ, but by the spirit of compunction. *The whole need not the Physician, but they that are sick.* A whole man may see his want of a Physician, but a sick man only feels his need of him, will prize him, send for him. By *the whole*, you are not to understand such as have no need indeed of Christ (for what sinner but hath need of him?) but such as feel no need of him: as by *sick* cannot be meant such as are sinful and miserable, for then Christ should come actually to save all men; but those that did feel themselves so, as a sick man that feels his sickness; these only are the men that feel a need and necessity of Christ; these only will come to Christ, and be glad of him, and be truly thankful for their recovery of him. And hence ariseth the great sin of the world in despising the Gospel, not at all affected with the glad tidings of it, because they are not affected with their

part

Reas. 2.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

Mat. 9.

12.

7. 1. 1.

2. 1. 1.

7. 1. 1.

sin and misery; or if they be affected but in part with the Gospel, it is because they are not thoroughly affected with their misery before.

Jer. 2.  
31.

And hence it is, that when the Lord called his people to him, yet they would not come to him; because they were Lords, and well enough without him.

Luk. 14.

Why did not they come to the Supper being invited? it was because they had farms, and oxen, and wives to attend unto; they felt no need of coming, as the poor, lame, blind and halt did.

Luk. 15.

17.

The Prodigal cares not for father nor father's house, until he comes to see, *Heri I dye*.

It is true, the grace of the Gospel draws men unto Christ; but it is very observable, that the Gospel reveals no grace, but with respect and in reference unto sinners, and men in extremity misery.

The Gospel saith not that Christ is come to save, but to *save sinners*, (and so save his people from their sins).

Rom. 5.  
6, 7, 8.

It reveals not this, that God justifies men, but he justifies the ungodly; it reveals not this, that Christ died for us, but that he died for them that were weak, for sinners, for enemies.

And if so, can any man imagine that this news will be sweet, unless men see and feel the infinite misery of sin, and the fruits of it?

Col. 3. 7.

Will not men say or think, What great matter is there in that? Suppose we be sinners and enemies, yet we are well enough; before Christ comes, a man's life lies in his sin.

Now suppose any should

pro-

proclaim to a company of men the great favour of their Prince toward them, that he is such a gracious Prince as will take away all their lives ; will this be glad tidings? Gospel grace cannot be set out, much less felt, but in reference to sin and misery, which must be first felt, before it can be sweet : Because Christ will never come but on'y unto such as feel their misery ; for you will say, A man may come to Christ without it : I say again, if he doth (as he hath many followers) yet Christ will not come to him, nor commit himself to him ; *I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance* : In which place note, That as by righteous is not meant such as are sincerely so, but such as think and find themselves so ; so by sinners is not meant all manner of impenitent and hard hearted sinners, but such as think and feel themselves such, and lament under it : Now God the Father sent him only unto such ; he is sent not to heal the hard-hearted, but the *broken-hearted* ; indeed he is sent to make men broken-hearted, who have hard hearts ; but he is not sent to heal them until then ; the Lord leaves the ninety nine that need no repentance, to wander for ever ; the one lost sheep, who feels it self so, and feels a need of a Saviour to come and find it out ; who cannot come and find out him : the Lord Jesus will come unto, and unto him only, leaving all the ninety nine.

2 Cor. 5.  
14.  
Reas. 3.

Mat. 9.  
13.

Luk. 4.  
18.

Luk. 15.  
7.

Reas. 4.

This may lastly appear by considering the end of mans fall into sin, and the publishing of the Law to reveal sin; and of the Gospel also in reference unto sin and misery; why did the Lord suffer the fall of man? what was his great plot in it? it is apparent this, that thereby way might be made for the greater manifestation of Gods grace in Christ. The Serpent poysons all mankind, that the seed of the woman might have the glory of recovering some: This was Gods last end: The perdition of some (of themselves) being but subordinate unto this, *Rom. 9. 22. 23.* Surely *Adam* might have glorified grace if he had stood, and God had revealed his grace in preserving him (made mutable) from fall. But the Lord saw grace should not be sufficiently advanced to highest dignity by this, and therefore suffers him actually to fall, and that into an extreme depth of misery: Now consider mans fall in it self cannot be a mean of glorifying grace, but rather obscures all the glory of God; how shall the Lord attain his end then hereby? Truly if the Lord let men see and feel their fall and misery by it, now grace offered will be accepted and glorified. And therefore the Lord sends the Law to reveal sin, and make it exceeding sinful; and death for sin: that this end might be attained, *Gal. 3. 22.* And therefore feeling of sin and death and misery being the means, must precede the other as the

end



and; and therefore as grace may be seen by conviction of misery, so the sweetness of it only can be felt by feeling misery in this work of compunction.

But you will say, What is this Compunction, and wherein doth it consist?

*Quest.*

This is the third particular to be opened; in general it is, whereby the soul is affected with sin, and made sensible of sin; but more particularly, compunction is nothing less but a pricking of the heart; or the wounding of the soul with such fear and sorrow for sin and misery, as severs the soul from sin, and from going towards its eternal misery: so that it consists in three things.

*Ans.*

1. Fear.
2. Sorrow.
3. Separation from sin.

The Lord Jesus when he comes to rescue his Elect, look as Satan held them in their misery; first, by blinding their eyes from seeing of it; secondly, by hardning their hearts from feeling of it: So the Lord Jesus having cut asunder the first cord of Satan by conviction, breaks asunder the second by compunction, and causing the soul to feel and be affected with its misery; and as the whole soul is unaffected before he comes, so he makes the whole soul sensible when he comes, and therefore he fills the conscience with fear, and the heart with sorrow and mourning, so as now the will of sin is broken, which was hardened before these fears

and sorrows seized upon it. Let me open  
thee particularly, that you may taste and  
try the truth of what now we deliver.

1.

I say, the Lord Christ in this work of  
compunction lets into the heart of a secure  
sinner a marvellous fear and terror of the  
dreadful displeasure of God, of death, and  
hell, the punishment of sin: O beloved,  
looke upon most men at this day, this is  
the great misery lying upon them; they do  
not fear the wrath to come, they fear not  
death nor damning, even then when they  
hear and know it is their portion; but their  
hearts are set to sin, *Eccles. 8. 11.*

The Lord Christ therefore lets in the  
fear; that look, as the Lord when he comes  
to conquer the Canaanites, *Exod. 23. 27.*  
*28. He sent his hornets before him,* which  
were certain fears, which made their hearts  
faint in the day of battel, and by this sub-  
dued them: So the Lord Christ when he  
comes to conquer a poor sinner, that has  
long resisted him, and would go on to his  
own perdition, lets in these fears, that the  
soul shrinks in with the thoughts of its wo-  
ful estate, and cries out secretly, Lord what  
will become of me, if I dye in this condi-  
tion? *Paul* trembles astonished at his mi-  
sery and wickedness, and now he begins to  
cry out; the Jaylor was very cruel against  
*Paul*, but when the Lord Jesus comes to  
rescue him from this condition, you shall  
find him trembling. The Lord hath let in the

Aet. 3. 6

Aet. 16.

fear, that now he is content to do any thing  
to be saved from the danger like he saw he was  
now in ; when a man sees danger, and great  
danger neer and imminent, now man natu-  
rally fears it : before Christ comes the soul  
may see its misery ; but it apprehends it a-  
far off, and hoping to escape it, and hence  
doth not fear it ; but when the Lord Jesus  
comes, he presents a mans danger, death,  
wrath, and eternity neer unto him, and hence  
hath no hope to escape it, as now he is, and  
therefore doth fear, and seeing the misery  
exceeding great, he hath an exceeding great  
(though oft-times deep) fear of it ; as men  
neer death and apprehending it so, begin  
then to be troubled, and cry out When it is  
too late. The Lord Jesus deals more mer-  
cifully with the Elect, and brings death and  
eternity neer them, before they draw neer  
to it ; whilst it is called to day : The poor  
Jaylor began to think of killing himself,  
when fears were upon him, and so many  
under this stroke of Christ, have the same  
thoughts, because they see no hope ; but  
this measure is not in all, this work is in all,  
*Put them in fear O Lord, that they may know*  
*they be but men* ; before this fear comes, men  
are above God, and think they can stand it  
out against him ; the Lord therefore lets in  
this fear to make them know they be but  
men, and that as proud, and stout, and  
great as they are, yet that they are not above  
God, and that it is vain to kick against the  
E 3 pricks,

*Pfal. 10.*  
5.

At. 16.

*Pf. 9. 20.*

Rom. 8.

15.

pricks, and go on as they have done; for if they do, he will not endure it long: The Spirit of Bondage makes men fear, before the Spirit of Adoption comes, these fears therefore are such, as the regenerate after they have received the Spirit of Adoption never have: and therefore they are such as pursue the soul with some threatening of the word, pronouncing death and perdition to him in that estate: *Ex. gr. He that believes not is condemned already*, Thus the Word speaks to conscience, *John 3. 17. Thou believest not* faith a mans own conscience, the Spirit witnessing with it; therefore thou art condemned faith conscience, now the Spirit of Bondage is the testimony of Gods Spirit, witnessing to both the premises and conclusion: Now this Spirit no regenerate man indeed ever hath after this time, but the fears he hath arise from another principle of corruption of conscience, malice of Satan through the present defection of the Spirit leaving him, not from any positive witness of the Spirit; of any such distrust, which yet is truth, while the soul is under this stroke and not regenerate: mark therefore diligently, that this fear is the work of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus; and hence it follows,

1. That these Fears are not merely natural (as those, *Rom. 2. 15.*) arising from natural conscience only, which only accuse of sin, but never effect

but they are supernatural, they are arrows shot into the conscience by the arm of the Spirit; so dreadful that no word, nor medication of death and eternity can beget such fears, but creates them.

2. Hence it followes, that they are clear fears (for the Spirits work is ever clear, before he leaves it, *Ephes. 5. 13.*) they are not blind confused fears, and suspicions, and sad conjectures, whereby many a man is afraid, and much afraid, and affrighted like men in a dream, that think they are in bell, yet cannot tell what that evil is which they fear; but they are clear fears, whereby they distinctly know and see that they are miserable, and what that misery is.

3. Hence it followes, that they are strong fears, because the Almighty hand of the Spirit sets them on, and shakes the soul; they are not weak fears, which a man can shake off, or cure by weak hopes, sleep, or business, &c. like some winds that shake the tree, but never blow it down, but these fears cast down the tallest Cedar, and appall the heart, and cool the courage and boldness of the most impenitent and audacious sinner. The Spirit presenting the greatest evil in eternal separation from God: hence no evil in the world is so dreadful as this, I had better never been born then to bear it (saith the soul) & hence casts off all other thoughts,

Amos 3.

8.

and cannot be quiet; and hence it is that these fears force a man to flee, and seek out for a better condition. A man like *Lot* lingers in his sin, but these fears like the Angels drive him violently out, the Lord saying to him, Away for thy life, lest thou perish with the world, for thy sins are come up to heaven, thou must dye before one day be at an end, and then what will become of thee? Ah thou sinful wretched man! May not the Lord justly do it? Are not thy sins grown so great and many, that they are an intollerable burden for the soul of God to bear any longer? and hence you shall observe, if the soul after sad fears grows bold and careless again, the spirit pursues it with more cause of fear, and now the soul cries out Did the Lord ever elect thee? Christ shed his blood to save his people from their sins, thou livest yet in thy sins, did he ever shed his blood for thee? thou hast sinned against conscience after thou hast been enlightened, and fallen back again, hast not thou therefore committed the impardonable sin? thou hast had many a fair season of seeking God, but hast dallied and dreamt away thy time; is not the day of grace therefore now past? it is true the Lord is yet patient and bountiful and lets thee live on common mercy, but is not all this to aggravate thy condemnation against that great and terrible day of the Lord which is at hand? are there not better men in he'l then thou art, that never com-

mitted

mitted the like sin? thus the Spirit pursues  
with strong fears, till proud man falls down  
to the dust before God. The soul is now  
under fears, not above them; and therefore  
cannot come out of these chains, by the  
most comfortable doctrine it hears, nor  
particular application of it by the most mer-  
ciful Minister in the world, until the Lord  
say, as *Lam. 3. 37. Fear not*; the Lord only  
can assuage these strong winds, and raging  
waters, in which there is no other cry heard  
of this soul tossed thus with tempests, but  
Oh I perish! Only the Lord making way  
for the Spirit of Adoption by these in his E-  
lect, drives them out to seek if there be any  
hope, and so they are not properly despe-  
rate fears, yet, as I say, strong fears, not  
alike extensively, yet alike intensively strong  
in all; a small evil, when tidings is  
brought of it, doth not fear; but if the e-  
vil be apprehended great and neer too, the  
very suspicion makes the heart tremble;  
when a house is on fire, or a mighty Army  
entred the land, and neer the City, children  
that know not the greatness of the evil fear  
them not; but men that know the dan-  
ger are full of fear. The wrath of the  
Lord, that fire, those armies of everlasting  
woes, are great evils, the blind world may  
not much fear them, but all the Elect, whose  
minds are convinced to see the greatness of  
them, cannot but fear, and that with strong  
and constant fears; nor is it cowardise, but  
duty

Luk. 23.  
40.

duty to fear these everlasting burnings. And hence the soul in this case wonders at the security of the world, dreads the terrours the Lord that are near them, and usually seeks to awaken all its poor friends. I once thought my self well, and was quiet you be, but the Lord hath let me see my woe, which I cannot but fear; O look you to it.

Thus the Lord works this fear in some a greater, in others in a lesser measure. Consider whether the Lord hath thus affected your hearts with fear! Oh secure times what will God do with us? Many of you having heard the voice of the Lyon roaring and yet you tremble not. The Lord hath foretold you of death and eternal woe for the least sin; do you believe it, and yet fear not? how art thou then forsaken of God? Many of you that like old Mariners can laugh at all foul weather, and like Weather cocks, set your faces against all winds; and you be damned at last, you cannot help it; you must bear it as well as you can, and you hope to do it as well as others shall do. Oh! how far are such from the Kingdom of God, the Lord not yet working, nor pricking thy heart so much as with fear?

2.

2. Sorrow and mourning for sin is the second thing wherein compunction consists. And look, as fear plucks the soul from security in seeing no evil to come so Sorrow takes off the present pleasure



and delight in sin, in a greater measure then Fear doth. The Lord therefore having smitten the soul, or shot the arrowes of fear into the soul, it therefore grows exceeding sad and heavy, thinking within it self, What good do wife or children, house or lands, peace and friends, health and rest do me? in the mean time, condemned to dye, and that eternally; it may be reprobated never to see Gods face more: the guilt and power of sin in the heart and life lying still upon me? And hereupon the soul mourns in the day, and in the night desires to go alone and weep; and there confesseth its vileness before God, all the days of vanity, and sins of ignorance, thinking, Oh! what have I done! and seeks for mercy; but not one smile, nothing but clouds of anger appear; and then thinks, If this anger, the fruit of my sin be so great, Oh what are my sins, the cause hereof! When the Angel had set out the sin of the Israelites, in making a league with the Canaanites, and told them that they should be *thornes in their sides*, they *sate down*, verse 4. *and lift up their voice and wept*: So 'tis with a contrite sinner. Note narrowly that eminent place of Scripture, *Isaiah 61. 3.* the Lord Christ is sent to appoint *beauty for ashes*, and *the oyl of joy for the Spirit of heaviness*, to *them that mourn*. Out of which note these four things, for the explication of this sorrow or mourning.

Judg: 21  
I.

First,

Jer. 31.  
18.

Hos. 6.  
2.

Zac. 12  
11. cap.  
13. 1.

First, It is such a mourning as is pre-  
cedent unto spiritual joy : and hence it is  
said, I will give the spirit of gladness to be-  
get mourning (though the Lord doth so af-  
ter conversion) but this goes in order before  
that. *Ephraim-like*, who seeing what an  
*unruly beast* he had been, *unaccustomed to Gods*  
*yoke*, smites upon his thigh, and bemoans him-  
self. It is Gods method (after Gods peo-  
ple have sinned) to sad their hearts, and  
then to turn mourning into joy ; much  
more at first beginning of Gods work upon  
the soul, they shall first mourn, and lament,  
and smite upon the thigh : If God wound  
the soul for sin it shall smart, and bleed, and  
before God will heal.

Secondly, It is a great mourning, because  
it is called a *spirit of mourning* : As a  
*spirit of slumber* is a deep slumber. When  
the poor Jews shall be converted, their  
great sin shall then be presented before  
them, of cursing, and crucifying the Lord  
of Life ; as it was to those, *Act. 2. 36.*  
And by reason of this there shall be a *great*  
*mourning*, that they shall desire to go alone  
in secret, *every one apart*, and take their fill  
of mourning, before the Lord *open the foun-  
tain of grace*. It is not a Summer cloud, or  
an April showre, that is soon spent, but a  
great mourning. For, 1. Before this  
spirit of sorrow come, a mans heart takes  
great delight in his sin, 'tis his god, his  
life, and sweeter then Christ, and all  
the

the joys of heaven; and therefore there must be great sorrow, sin must be made exceeding bitter. A man that is very hungry and thirsty after his lust, must find such meat and drink exceeding bitter, else he will feed on it. Solomon took great content in women, but what saith he when the Lord humbled him? *I find a woman more bitter then death.* Hear this you Harlots, and you that live in your wanton lusts, the Lord will make your sweet morsels more bitter then death to you, if the Lord saves you.

2. Because the greatest evils are the objects of this sorrow, viz. Sin and death. It is true, a man may mourn for smaller evils sooner; but when the Spirit sets on the greatest evils, then they sad much more. *Mine iniquities are too heavy to bear:* Why so? Many a man can bear them without sinking. True, but in the Elect the Spirit sets on, loads the soul herewith, *A wounded spirit who can bear?* Because the greatest evils lye upon the most tender part of a tender soul, pressed down by the Omnipotent hand of Christs Spirit. For now the multitude of sins, more then the hairs on the head come now to mind; as also the long continuance in them, cradle sins. No sooner, saith the soul, did I begin to live, but I began to sin. Obstinacy also in them lies very heavy; I have had warnings, checks, resolutions against them, and yet have gone on. The power of sin

*Eccles.*  
7. 26.

*Psal.* 28.  
1, 2.

*Pro.* 18.  
14.

*Psal.* 32  
2, 3, 6  
*Psal.* 40  
12

*Jer.* 31.  
19.

sin also sads it ; that it is said, *Prov. 21. 9.* *When the wicked reign, the people mourn* so doth the soul when it feels sin reign. I cannot subdue it, may the Lord will nor that I fear the Lord hath left me over to it. The encrease of sin it feels ; makes it mourn also ; I grow worse and worse, saith the soul ; the leak comes in faster than he can cast it out ; the greatness of sin makes it mourn. Was there ever such a sinner as I ? And lastly, The sense of condemnation for sin lies upon him ; this is the fruit of your evil ways, saith the Spirit. The soul doth not let sin pass by now, as water down the Mill, but being stopt by conviction, and fear of the evil of it, it swells very high, and fills the heart full of grief and sorrow, that many times it is overwhelmed therewith.

*Dan. 9.*

1.

*Jer. 3.*

ult:

3. Because Christ will not be very sweet, unless this mourning under misery be very great ; the healing of a cut finger is sweet, but of a mortal wound is exceeding sweet ; a little sorrow will make Christ sweet, but great sorrow under sense of deadly wounds is exceeding sweet ; and without this Christ hath not his honour due to him, if he be not only sweet, but also exceeding sweet and precious.

*Mat. 10.*

37.

4. Because it is such a sorrow, as nothing but that that hath wounded the soul can heal it. Let men have the greatest outward troubles, outward things can cure them ;

else

life they will wear away. As if a man be sick, or in debt, physick and money can cure these; but this wound neither can, or ever shall be healed, but by the hand that wounded it. And hence a man can take no comfort in meat, drink, sleep, friends, mirth, nor pastime, while this wound, this sorrow lasts; nor if any thing else can heal it, it is not the right wound, or sorrow the Lord breeds in his Elect: an adulterous heart indeed may be quietted with other lovers, Cain can build away his sorrow. Nay, I'll say more, this wounded soul cannot comfort it self by any promises, till the Lord come: David had a promise of pardon from Nathan, yet he cries out to the Lord, *to make him hear the voice of joy and gladness, that his broken bones might rejoice.* Did not the Lord make him hear the voice of joy by Nathan? Yes, outwardly; but the Lord that had broke his bones, must make him hear inwardly. Nay, when the Lord comes himself to comfort, much ado the Lord hath to make him hear; as the Israelites that *hearkened not to Moses voice, because of their hard bondage,* that unless the Lord did invincibly comfort, it would lye bleeding to death and never live. It must needs therefore be great sorrow, which all the world, men nor angels can remove.

5. You may be confirmed in this, if lastly you consider the many ways the Lord takes to beget great mourning, if the soul wil

Hof. 6. 1,  
2.

Pf. 51. 8

2 Chron.  
53. 11,  
12.

2 Chr.

53. 11.

12.

Lam, 2.

4.

Psal. 39

10. 11.

will not be sorrowful : as, sometimes great afflictions ; *Manasseh* must be taken out of the bushes, and be cast into chains. Sometimes strange temptations, hellish blasphemies, Is there a God ? are the Scriptures his Word ? why should the Lord be so cruel as to reprobate any of his creatures, to torment it so long ? &c. Sometimes long eclipsing of the light of Gods countenance ; no prayers answered, but daylie bills of indictment. And sometimes it thinks it hears and feels secret testimonie from God, that he never had thought of peace towards it, and that his purpose is immutable. Sometimes it questions, Can God so give sin so great ? Can he stand with his honour to put up so much wrong ? Sometimes it feels its heart so exultant hard and dedolent, that it thinks the Lord hath sealed it up under this plague of the judgment of the great day. And sometimes the Lord makes melancholly a good servant to him to further this work of sorrow. But thus the Lord rebukes many a hardened sinner, that will not bear the yoke nor feel the load ; and now the Lord turns the beauty of the proudest into ashes, and withers the glory of all flesh. Nay sometimes you shall observe the Lord, though he comes not out as a *Lion* to rend, yet as a *Moth* he frets out by secret pinnings and gnawings, the senseless security of man, that he shall mourn to purpose before he sees him. I do not mean by this as if a

men had the like measure of sorrow ; but a great sorrow it is in all. Every child is delivered by some throws ; those that stick long in the birth may feel them longer, and very many.

Nor yet do I press a necessity of tears, or violent and tumultuous complaints ; the deepest sorrows run with least noise. If a man can have tears for outward losses, and none for sins, 'tis very suspicious whether he was ever truly sorrowful for sin : Otherwise, as the greatest joys are not always exprest in laughter, so the greatest sorrows are not always exprest in shedding of tears ; what the measure of this great sorrow is, we shall hear hereafter :

Thirdly, It is a constant mourning, for so it is here called, *a spirit of heaviness* ; as that woman that had a spirit of infirmity, and was bowed down many years : *Hannah* constantly troubled, is called, *a woman of a sorrowful spirit*, 1 Sam. 1. 12. 15. *As the spirit of pride and whoredom*, Hos. 4. 12. is a constant frame, where though the acts be sometime suspended, yet the spirit remains ; so *a spirit of mourning* is such sorrow, as though the acts of mourning be sometime hindered, yet the spirit and spring remains ; Hypocrites will mourn under sin and misery, but what is it ? it is *the hanging down the head like a bulrush in bad weather*, for a day. Oh how many have pangs and gripes of sorrow, and can quickly ease themselves again ? These

Isa. 5. 8.

5.

mourners come to nothing in the conclusion; I grant the sorrow and sadness of spirit may be interrupted, but it returns again, and never leaves the soul, until the Lord look down from heaven, *Lament.* 3. 48, 49, 50. The cause continues, guilt and strength of sin, and therefore this effect continues.

Fourthly, It is such a sorrow as makes way for gladness, for so it is here said, *The Lord gives beauty for these ashes*, and hence it is no desperate hellish sorrow, but usually mixt with sense of some mercy, at least common, and some hope; not that which apprehends the object of hope particularly (which is done in vocation) but that the Lord may find out some way of saving it. *Jonah* 3. 9. *Acts* 2. 37. which hope with sense of mercy waiting so long, preserving from hell and death so oft, &c. doth not harden the heart (as in reprobates) but serve to break the more, and to load with greater sorrow; thus the Lord works this sorrow in all his Elect. I know it is in a greater measure, and from some other grounds after the soul is in Christ; but the sorrow there is for substance, mentioned for the reasons given; if Christ hate you, you shall mourn, but never till it be too late; he love you, you must mourn now; how great and many are many of your sins, how near is your doom! the Lord only knows how fearful your condemnation will be.



you have oft heard; but yet how few of your hearts are sad and very heavy for these things? sin is your pleasure, not your sorrow; you fly from sorrow, as from a temptation of Satan who comes to trouble you, and to leade you to despair: *Dauids eyes ran down with rivers of water, because others broke Gods Law, and Jeremiah wisht he had a cottage in the wilderness to mourn in,* and yet you do not, you cannot pour out one drop, nor yet wish you had hearts to lament your own sins: But Oh know it! that when the Lord Christ comes, he will search thy soul, when he comes to search thy inmosts by the Spirit of conviction, he will make them smart and bleed abundantly, by the Spirit of compunction.

3. Separation from sin is the third thing wherein compunction consists, such a fear and sorrow for sin under a sinful estate, as separates the soul from sin, is true compunction; without which the Lord Christ cannot be had: the soul is cut and wounded from sin by fear and sorrow, but it is cut off by this stroke of the Spirit, not from the being, but from the growing power of sin; from the will to sin, not from all sin in the will, which is mortified by a Spirit of holiness, after the soul is implanted in Christ; for compunction, contrition, tokenness of heart for sin (call it what you will) is opposite to hardness of heart, which is in every sinner whilst

Isa. 58.  
5.

Pro. 28.  
13.

Christ leaves him ; now in hardness (as in a stone) there is, First insensibleness. Secondly a close cleaving of all the parts together whereby it comes to pass that hard things make resistance of what is cast against them. So in compunction, there is not only sensibleness of the evil of sin and death, by fear and sorrow, but such as makes a separation of that close union between sin and the soul : and hence it is that the Lord abhors all fastings, humiliations, prayers, tears ; unless they be of this stamp, and are accompanied with this effect. The Lord flings the dung of their fastings and sorrows in their faces ; because they do not break the bonds of wickedness ; they mourn for sin and misery, and yet remain in thy sin ; is the work of justice on the damned in hell, and all the Devils at the day that are pinched with their black chains not loosened from them ; and not the work of the grace of Christ in the day of his power. *He that confesseth his sins shall have mercy* ; that is true, but remember the meaning of that Confession in the next words, *and forsaketh*, he shall find mercy. What is the end of the mother in laying wormwood and gall upon her breast but that the child, by tasting the bitterness of it, might be weaned, and have his stomach and will turned from it ? what is the end of fear and sorrow, but by this to tear away the soul from sin ? This point

weighty and full of difficulty, of great use, and worthy of deep meditation. For as the first wound and stroke of the Spirit is, so it is in all afterworks of it, both of faith and holiness in the soul, if this be right, faith is right, holiness is right; if this be imperfect, or naught, all is according to it afterward: the greatest difficulty lies here, to know what measure of separation from sin the Spirit makes here; for after we are in Christ, then sin is mortified; how then is their any separation of the heart from it, before it doth fully believe; or what measure is there necessary? here therefore I shall answer to the fourth and last particular, *viz.*

Fourthly, What is that measure of compunction the Lord works in all the Elect?

So much compunction or sense of sin is necessary as attains the end of it: Now what is the end of it? no other but that the soul being humbled might go to Christ (by faith) to take away his sin; the *finis proximus* or next end of compunction is humiliation, that the soul may be so severed from sin, as to renounce it self for it; the *finis remotus* or last end is, that being thus humbled, it might go unto Christ to take away sin: for beloved, the condemnation of the world lies not so much in being sinful under guilt and power of sin, as in being unwilling the Lord Jesus should take it away: this I say is the greatest hinderance of salvation, *Job. 3. 19. Job. 5. 40. Oh Jerusalem wilt*

*Job. 33.  
15, 16,  
17.*

4.

*Answ.*

*wilt thou not be made clean?* Jer 13. 17. that was their great evil, they were not only polluted, but they *would not be made clean*: The Lord Jesus therefore rolls away this stone from the Sepulchre, beats down this mountain; and because it must first believe in Christ, before it can receive Grace from Christ, it must come to Christ to take away sin, before the Lord will do it: Hence, so much loosening from sin, as makes the soul thus to come is necessary. So much fear and sorrow as loosens from sin, and so much loosening from sin as makes the soul willing, or at least not unwilling that the Lord Jesus should take it away, is necessary: For whoever comes to Christ, or is not willing Christ should come to him to take away all his sin, hath (whatever he thinks) some antecedent loosening and separation from sin.

Oh saith a poor sinner, when the Lord hath struck his heart, and he feels guilt and terrour, and mighty strength of corruption, if the Lord Jesus would take away these evils from me, though I cannot, means cannot, that will be exceeding rich mercy. The Lord doth not wound the heart to this end, that the soul should first heal it self before it come to the Physician, but that it might seek out, or feeling its need, be willing and desirous of a Physician, the Lord Jesus to come and heal it. It is the great fault of many Christians, either their wound

and sorrows are so little, they desire not to be healed ; or if they do, they labour to heal themselves first, before they come to the Physitian for it ; they will first make themselves holy, and put on their jewels, and then believe in Christ. And hence are those many complaints, What have I to do with Christ? Why should he have to do with me, that have such unholy, vile, hard, blind, and most wicked heart? If I were more humbled, and more holy, then I should go to him, and think he would come to me. Oh for the Lords sake dishonour not the grace of Christ. It is true, thou canst not come to Christ, till thou art loaden, and humbled, and separated from thy sin. Thou canst not be ingrafted into this Olive, unless thou beest cut, and cut off too from thy old root. Yet remember for ever, that no more sorrow for sin, no more separation from sin is necessary to thy closing with Christ, then so much as makes thee willing, or rather not unwilling that the Lord should take it away. And know it, if thou seekest for a greater measure of humiliation antecedent to thy closing with Christ then this, thou shewest the more pride therein, who wilt rather go into thy self, to make thy self holy and humble, that thou mightest be worthy of Christ, then go out of thy self, unto the Lord Jesus, to take thy sin away. In a word, thou who thinkest Christ cannot love thee, until thou

makest thy self fair, and when thou thinkest thy self so (which is pride) wilt then think otherwise of Christ. The Lord therefore when he teacheth his people how to return to him after grievous sins, directs them to this course, not to go about the bush, to remove their iniquities themselves, or to stay and live securely in their sins, until the Lord did it himself; but bids them come to him, and say, *Take away (Lord) all iniquities, Hos. 14. 1, 2, 3.* You shall see *Ephraim bemoaning himself, Jer. 21. 18.* But how? Doth he say he feels his sins now all removed? No, but he desires the Lord to turn him, and then (saith he) *I shall be turned.*

As if he should say, Lord, I shall never turn from this stubborn vile heart, nor so much as turn to thee to take it away, unless thou dost turn me, and then I shall be turned to purpose. What saith the penitent Church? *Come, say they, let us go unto the Lord. Hos. 6. 1.* They might object and say, Alas, the Lord is our enemy, and wounds us, and hath broken us to pieces, we are not yet healed, but lie dead as well as wounded; shall such dead spirits live? Mark what follows, True indeed, *He hath wounded us,* let us therefore go to him, that he may heal us, and after *two days he will revive us.* The Lord requires no more of us then thus to come to him. Indeed after a Christian is in Christ, labour for more and more

sense of sin, that may drive you nearer and nearer unto Christ; yet know before you come to him, the Lord requires no more than this; and as he requires no more than this; so 'tis his own Spirit (not our abilities) that must also work this: and thus much he will work, and doth require of all whom he purposeth to save. If thou wilt not come to Christ to take away thy sins, thou shalt undoubtedly perish in them. If the Lord work that sorrow, so as to be willing the Lord should take them away, thou shalt be undoubtedly saved from them.

Jd. 5. 40

If you would know what measure of willingness to have Christ take away sin is required: You shall hear when we come to open the fourth particular in the doctrine of Faith.

If you further ask, How the Spirit works this loosening from sin in the work of compunction.

Quest.

I answer, The Spirit of Christ works this by a double act.

Answ.

1. Moral.

2. Physical.

As in the conversion of the soul by faith unto God, the Spirit is not only a moral agent perswading, but also a supernatural agent, physically working the heart to believe, by a divine and immediate act; so in the aversion of the soul from sin, the Spirit doth affect the heart with fear and sorrow morally

Jer. 8.  
11.

Quest.

Ans.

morally, but this can never take away sin as we see in *Judas and Cain*, deeply affected and afflicted in spirit, and yet in the sin. And therefore the Spirit puts forth its own hand, physically or immediately, and his own arm brings salvation to us, by a further secret immediate stroke, turning the iron neck, cutting the iron sinews of sin, and so makes this disunion or separation. You think it is easie to be willing that Christ should come and take away all your sins; I tell you, the omnipotent arm of the Lord that instructed *Jeremiah* in a smaller matter, can only instruct you here, both these acts ever go together according to the measure mentioned; the latter cannot be without the first, the first is in vain without the latter.

But what evil in sin doth the Spirit morally affect the heart with, and so physically turn it from sin?

He affects the soul with it as the greatest evil; by *sin* I mean not as considered without *death* (for at this time the soul is not spiritual, as that sin without consideration of death and wrath due to it should affect it) but sin and death, sin armed with wrath, sin working death, pricks the heart as the greatest evil, and so lets out that core at the bottom, as may fit the soul for healing. For,

1. If the Spirit make a man feel sin truly, the soul feels it as it is; it is not the name



talk of the danger of sin that troubles it, but the Spirit (ever making things real) loads the soul with it indeed, and as it is; now it is the greatest evil, and therefore so it feels sin. Believe it, you never felt sin indeed as it is, if you have not felt it thus.

2. Else no man will prize Christ as the greatest good, without which no man shall have him.

3. Else a man will live and continue in sin. If sin had been a greater evil to *Pilate* than the loss of *Cæsar's* friendship, he would never have crucified Christ. If sin had been a greater evil to *Jehu* than the loss of his Kingdom, he had never kept up the two calves. If sin were a greater evil than poverty, shame, grief in this world, many a Professor would never lose Christ and a good conscience too, for a little gain, profit or honour. Beloved, the great curse and wrath of the Lord upon all men in the world almost is this, that the greatest evils should be least of all felt, and the smallest evils most of all complained of. What is death that on'y separates thy soul from thy body, to sin, that separates God blessed for ever from thy soul? and therefore the Lord Jesus will remove this curse from whom he saves.

But you will say, What is that evil the soul sees at this time in sin, that thus affects the heart with it, as the greatest evil? This is the last difficulty here.

There

Mat. 10.

37.

Act. 3.

26.

Quest.

*Ans.*

There is a threefold evil especially seen in sin.

1. The evil of torment and anguish.
2. The evil of wrong and injury to God.
3. The evil of separation of the soul from God.

The first may affect Reprobates, as *Saul* and *Judas*, who were sore distressed when they felt the anguish of conscience for sin.

The second is only in those who are actually justified, called and sanctified, who lament sin as it is against God, and a God reconciled to them, and as it is against the life of God begun in them: And hence they cry out of it, as a *body of death*.

*Luke 15*

7.

The third the Elect feel at this first stroke and wound which the Spirit gives them; the anguish of sin indeed lies sore upon them, but *this much more*. *Christ is come to seek that which is lost*. The sheep is lost, when first it is separated and gone from the owner: Secondly, when it knows not how to return again, unless the Shepherd find it and carry it home: So that the soul is properly and truly lost, that feels itself separated and gone from God, knowing not how to return to him again, unless the Lord come and take it upon his shoulders, and carry it in his arms; this lies heavy upon it, *viz.* that it is gone from God.

*Isa. 33.*

6.

and

and wholly separated from all union to him, and communion with him. You may observe, *John 16. 9.* that *the Spirit convinces of sin*; how? *because they believe not in me*, i. Because they shall see and feel themselves quite separated from me; they shall hear of my glory and riches of mercy, and that happiness which all that have me shall and do enjoy; but they shall mourn that they have no part nor portion in these things; they shall mourn that they live without me, and that they have lived so long without me.

I confess many other considerations of the evil of sin come now in, but this is the main channel, where all the other rivulets empty themselves. And hence it is that the soul under this stroke is in a state of seeking only, yet finds nothing; it seeks God and Christ, and therefore feels a want, a loss of both by sin; for the end of all the fears, terrors, sorrows, &c. upon the Elect, is to bring them back again to God, and into fellowship with God, the only blessedness of man. Now if the soul ordained and made for this end, should not feel its present separation from God by sin, and the bitterness of it, it would never seek to return again to him as to his greatest good, nor desire ever to come to his bosom again; for look as sin wounds the soul, so the soul seeks for healing of it; if only the torment of sin wound, ease of conscience from that anguish

Heb. 7.  
25.  
Isa. 56.8

anguish will heal it : So if separation from God wound the heart, only union and communion with God will heal it, and comfort it again. The Lord Christ therefore having laid his hand upon the soul, to bring it back to himself first, and so to the Father, being designed to gather in all the out-casts of Israel, those he ever makes to feel themselves out-casts, as cast away out of Gods blessed sight and presence, that so they may desire at last to come home again : Reprobates not made for this end, have not this sense of sin, the means of their return. And hence it is that the souls of those God saves, are never quiet until they come to God, and have communion with him ; but they mourn for their distance from him, and the hiding of his face until the Lord shine forth again : Whereas every one else though much troubled, yet sits down contented with any little odd thing, that serves to quiet them for the time, before the Lord return to them, or they enter into their rest, in that ineffable communion with him.

Let me now make Application of this, before I proceed to open the next particular of Humiliation.

This may shew us the great mistake of two sorts.

Vse 1.

1. Such as think there is no necessity of any sense of misery, before the application of the remedy, or their closing with Christ ;

be-

because say they, where there is sense there is life : (all sense and feeling arising from life) and where there is life there is Christ already. And hence it is that they would not have the Law first preached in these days, but the Gospel ; the other is to go round about the bush.

I answer, that for mine own part this doctrine (of seeing and feeling our misery before the remedy) is so universally received by all solid Divines both at whom and abroad, that I meet with ; and the contrary opinion so cross to the holy Scriptures, and general experience of the Saints, and the preaching of the other so abundantly sealed to by Gods own way, by his rich blessings on the labours of his servants faithful to him herein ; that were it not for the sake of some weak and misled, I should not dare to question it ; the Lord himself so expressly speaking, that he came not to call the righteous, *but* on the contrary *only to heal the sick*, who know and feel their sickness chiefly by the *Law*, Rom. 3. 20. Dost thou think therefore that there is spiritual life where ever there is any sense ? Then I say, the Devils and damned in hell have much spiritual life, for they feel their misery with a witness.

As for the preaching of the Gospel before the Law, to shew our misery ; it is true that the Gospel is to be looked at as the main end ; yet you must use the means, before

before you can come to the end, by the preaching of the Law, or misery in despising the Gospel, End and Means have been ever good friends; and you may joyn them well together, you cannot sever them without our danger. I do observe that the Apostle ever used this method: *Paul* first proved *Jews and Gentiles to be under sin*, in almost the three first Chapters of the *Romanes*, before he opens the Doctrine of Justification by faith in Christ. I do not observe that ever there was so clear and manifest opening of mans misery, as by Christ and his Apostles, who brought in the clearest revelations of the remedy. I do not read *Moses* or in all the Prophets, such full and plain expressions of our misery as in the New Testament: *The worm that never dies*; *The fire that never goes out*; *the wrath to come* &c. and therefore assuredly they thought there was no back-door but faith the door to Christ; this is the way to faith. To say that a man may first have Christ and life, before he feels any spiritual misery, is to say that a Christian must first be healed, that he may be sick; cured, that he may be wounded; receive the Spirit of Adoption, before he receives; and that he may receive the spirit of bondage to fear again.

If Ministers shall preach the remedy before they shew misery, woe to this age, that shall be deprived of those blessings, which the former gloried in, and blessed the Lord for

for. Mark those men that deny the use of Law to lead unto Christ, if they do not fall in time to oppose some main point of the Gospel. For it is a righteous thing, but a heavy plague, for the Lord to suffer such men to obscure the Gospel, that in their judgments zealously dislike this use of the Law. You must preach the remedy, that is true; but you must also first preach the wo and misery of men, or rather so mix them together, as the hearts of hearers may be deeply affected with both; but first with their misery. It argues a greater consumption of the Spirit of grace, when Christians lives are preserved only by Alchermie and choice Cordials, notions about Christ, nay choice ones too, or else the old and ordinary food of the Country will not down. I tell you, the main wound of Christians is want of deep humiliations and castings down; and if you believe it not now; it may be, pestilence, sword, and famine shall teach you this doctrine when the Lord shall make these things wound you to the very heart, and put you to your wits end, that were not, that would not in season be wounded at the heart with sin.

Are we troubled with too many wounded consciences in these times, that we are so solicitous of coining new Principles of peace? what is every man by nature but a kind of an infinite evil? all the sins that

fill earth and hell, are in every one mans heart, for sin in man is endless ; and canst not thou endure to be cast down ? Nothing is so vile as Christ to a man not humbled, and can you so easily prize him, and taste him, without any casting down ?

2. Such as think there is a necessity of sense of misery by the work of the Law, before Christ can be received ; but they think there is no *such feeling* of misery, as hath been mentioned ; but that it is common to the Reprobate as to the Elect, and consequently, that in sense of sin there is no such special work of the Spirit as separates the soul from sin, before it comes unto Christ, but that this is done after the soul is in Christ by faith, *viz.* in sanctification being first justified by faith.

This is the judgment of many holy and learned ; and therefore so long as there is no disagreement in the substance of this doctrine, it should not trouble us ; only let it be considered, whether what is said is not the truth of Christ ; and if be, let us not cast it aside. The Jewish Rabbins have a speech at this day very frequent in their writings. *Non est in lege unica literula a qua non magni suspensi sunt montes* : It is much more true of every truth ; and if I much mistake not, much depends upon the right understanding of this point.

That therefore,

1. There must be some sense of misery, before



before the application of the remedy.

2. That this compunction or sense of misery is wrought by the Spirit of Christ, not the power of man to prepare himself thereby for further grace.

3. That these terrors and sorrows in the Elect, do virtually differ from those in the Reprobate; the one driving the soul from Christ, the other no; these are agreed on all hands. The Question only is, Whether there is this farther stroak of severing the soul from sin, conjoyned with the terrors and sorrows in the Elect, before their dosing with Christ, which is not in the Reprobate? or in one word, whether there is not a special work of the Spirit, turning (at least in order of nature) the soul from sin, before the soul returns by faith unto Christ?

For the affirmative I leave several considerations

That there is *gratia actualis*, or actual grace, as well as *habitualis*, or habitual grace; learned *Ferrinus* makes a vast difference between them; and therefore to think that there can be no power of sin removed but by habitual or sanctifying grace, is unsound: for actual grace may do it, the Spirit may take away sin mediately by habitual grace, and yet it can do it immediately also by an omnipotent act, by that which is called actual scouring, or moving grace; Christ can and must first bind the strong man,

1 Conf.

Scho.  
orth.  
Spec.  
cap. 50.  
31. 34.

and cast him out by this working or actual grace, before he dwells in the house of mans heart, by habitual and sanctifying Grace. The Gardners knife may immediately cut off a scien from a tree, thereby taking away all its power to grow there any more; before it hath a power to bring forth any fruit, which is wrought only by implanting it into another stock : New creation, (which is at first conversion) may well be without habitual graces, that are but creatures.

2 Conf.

Whether any man since the fall is a subject immediately capable of sanctifying or habitual grace; or whether any unregenerate man is in a next disposition to receive such grace; as the air is immediately of light, out of which the darkness is expelled by light, and so the habits of grace do expel the habits and power of sin (say some.) I suppose the affirmative is most false, and in neer affinity with some gross points of Arminianism. Adam, in his pure naturals, and considered meerly as a living soul, was such a subject; like a white paper fitted immediately to take the impression of Gods Image; but since, by his fall, sin is fallen like a mighty blot upon the soul, whereby a man not only wants grace, as the dark ayr doth light, but also *resists* grace, Job 14. 17. Hence this resistance must be first taken away, before the Lord introduce his image again. To say that a man can

of himself dispose himself unto grace, was Pelagianism in *Aquinas* doctrine: yet some disposition is necessary, faith *Ferriss*; not unto actual grace, or that which is wrought upon a man, *per modum actus*, as he saith, but unto the reception of habitual or sanctifying grace, it being in the soul *per modum forme*, no form being introduced but into *materiali*. *Dispositam*, or matter fitted or prepared, or into such a vessel which is immediately capable of it, *own*.

There is in man a double resistance against grace.

1. Of a holy frame of grace, by original corruption, which is opposite to original and renewed holiness, or to this Holy frame.

2. Of the God of Grace himself when he comes to work it, *Job 11. 7. up. Ezek. 24. 13.*

The first is taken away in that which we call the Spirit of sanctification after faith; the second is taken away not only in the act of it (as by terrors it may be in Reprobates, *Psal. 66. 2.*) but in some measure in the inward root and disposition of it (only in the Elect) there being (as hath been said) no more separation from sin, at this time required, then so much as may make the soul come to the Lord to take it away, or at least not unwilling, nor resisting the Lord, when he comes to do it himself.

*Isa. 5. 8.*

Whether doth not the work of union unto Christ go before our communion with Christ? I suppose 'tis undeniable, that union must be before communion; and that union to Christ is a work of grace as peculiar to the Elect, as communion with him.

Now justification and sanctification are two parts of our communion with him, and follow our union, *Rom. 8. 1.* Our union therefore must be before these, of which there are two parts, or rather two things on our part, necessarily required to it. 1. Cutting off from the wilde Olive-tree the old *Adam*. 2. Implanting into the good Olive-tree the second *Adam*.

3 *Conf.*

The first must go before the second; for where there is perfect resistance, there can be no perfect union. But take a man growing upon this old root of nature, there is nothing but perfect resistance, *Rom. 8. 7.* and therefore that resistance must first be taken away, before the Lord draw the soul to Christ, and by faith implant it into Christ. In a word, I see not how a man can wholly resist God and Christ, and yet be united unto him at the same instant: and therefore the one (in order of nature at least) goes before the other: and therefore let any man lying prove his union to Christ, and to his list also, if he can. You will believe in Christ many of you, and yet you will have your whores, and cups, and lusts, and pride, and world too, and oppose all the means

means that would have you from these also. I tell you, you shall find one day how miserably deceived you have been herein: *You cannot serve God and Mammon, How can ye believe,* saith Christ, Joh. 5. 44. *that seek honour one of another?* If you can have Christ, and be ambitious too, take him; but how can you believe till the Lord hath broken you off from thence?

Whether vocation (as peculiar to the Elect as sanctification) doth not go before justification and glorification, *Rom. 8. 30.* Whether also there are not two things in effectual vocation?

4 *Conf.*

1. Is not Christ, that good, the term to which the soul is firstly called?

2. Is not sin and world, that evil, the term from which the soul is called? I suppose 'tis evident that the soul is effectually called, and therefore actually and firstly turned from darkness to light, from the power of Satan unto God. First from darkness, then unto light; first from the power of Satan, then unto God; as is evident by the Apostles own words, *Act. 26. 18.* where he methodically sets down the wonderful works of Christs grace by his ministry; the first is to *turn them from darkness to light, and from Satans power unto God*; which are the two parts of vocation, *that they may receive forgiveness of sins*, in justification (vocation being a means to this end) that they may receive *an inheritance in glorification*

among such as being justified are sanctified also by faith in his name. The Apottle doth not say, that he was to return men to light, and unto God, and so turn them from darkness, and from the power of Satan (though this is true in some sense) but he was first to turn them from darkness and Satany and so, to return them unto light, and God in Christ: For how is it possible to be turned unto Christ, and yet then also to be turned to sin and Satan? Doth it not imply a contradiction, to be turned toward sin (which is ever from Christ) and yet to be turned toward Christ together? All Divines affirm generally, That in the working of Faith, the Lord makes the soul willing to have Christ, *Psal.* 110. 2, 3. but which they affirm, that of unwilling he makes willing, and therefore it follows, that the Lord must first remove that unwillingness, before it can be willing, it being impossible to be both willing and unwilling together.

5 Conf.

Whether the cause of all that counterfeit coin and hypocrisie in this professing Age, doth not arise from this root, viz. not having this wound at first, but only some trouble for sin, without separation from it, fore throwes without deliverance from sin. Is not this the death of most, if not all wicked men living? How many are there that clasp about Christ, and yet prove enemies to the Cross of Christ; fall from

Christ

Christ scandalously or secretly afterwards? What is the reason of it? Certainly, if the Lord had cut them off from their sin, they had never fallen to everlasting bondage in sin again; but there the Spirit of God forsook them, the Lord not owing so much love to them. Consider seriously why the stony and thorny-ground-hearers, *Mat. 13*, came to nothing in their growth of seeming faith and sanctification; was the fault in the seed? No verily, but only in the ground; the one was broken but not deep enough; the other was broken deep, but not thorough enough, the roots of thorns choked them, the lusts and cares of the world were not destroyed first, and therefore they destroyed that ground.

I conclude therefore with that of *Jeremy*, *Break up your fallow grounds*, seek to the Lord to break them for you, and sow not among thorns, take heed of such brokenness which removes not the thorns of sinful letter stubbornness, *least the wrath of the Lord break out against you, and burn that none can quench it. Do not cut off John Baptists head*, you that can be content to hear him gladly, and do many things, but he must not touch your *Herodias*, and make a divorce there, but suffer him to come in the spirit and power of *Elijah*, nay, of *Christ Jesus*, to beat down your mountains, fill up your valleys, and make your crooked and rough ways smooth, that you may

*Jer. 4. 3.*

4.

see

see the glory of the Lord Jesus, which he shall be ever hid from you. O you faithful Servants of the Lord, that, *flesh is grass, and all the glory of man, of this world, is a withered flower*; that the Lord Jesus may be revealed ever fresh, and sweet and precious in the eyes of the Saints.

*Vind.  
grat.p.  
7, 11, 13*

The evidence of this truth in the general put blessed and learned *Pemble* upon another way; for when he perceived (as himself confesseth) that it is the general doctrine of all Orthodox Divines, *viz.* That adf faith is never wrought in the soul, till before the supernatural illumination of the mind, the will be also first freed in part from its natural perverseness (God making all men of unwilling, willing) hereupon he concludes that this is done by the Spirit of Sanctification, and one supernatural quality of holiness universally infused in all the powers of the soul at once; so that the Spirit instantly first sanctifies us, and puts life in us, then it acts in sorrow for, and detestation of sin, and so we come actually to believe. And because he fore-saw the blow, viz. that in this way, Christians are sanctified before they be justified; he answers, Yes, we are justified declaratively after this.

Others (who follow him) answer more roundly, *viz.* that we are sanctified before we are really and actually justified, and hence in differ from him.



Now when it is objected against this, *viz.* that our vocation is that which goes before our justification, sanctification being a part of glorification following after, *Rom.* 8. 30. Hereupon some others (treading in his steps) affirm, that vocation is the same with sanctification, and not comprehended with glorification.

Others perceiving the evil of this error, *viz.* to place sanctification before justification, good fruits before a good tree, they do therefore deny any saving work, whether of vocation or sanctification, before justification. And hence on the other extreame, they do place a Christians justification, before his faith in vocation, or holiness in his sanctification: so that by this last opinion a Christian is not *justified by faith* (which was *Pauls* Phrase) but rather (as he said wittily and wisely) *faithed by his justification*. Before I come to clear the truth in these spiritual mysteries, let this only be remembered, *viz.* That sanctification, which *Pembroke* calls our spiritual life, may be taken two ways.

- { 1. Largely.
- { 2. Strictly.

1. Largely, for any awakenings of conscience, or acts of the Spirit of life, and so 'tis true, we are quickned by these acts, and so in a large sense sanctified first.

2. Strictly, for those habits of the life of holiness, which are opposite to the body  
of

of death in us; and that we are not sanctified before we are justified in the sense, we shall manifest by and by. - *Now let me begin to shew the error of this opinion first, viz. 1. That a Christian is not first justified before faith or vocation, as appear thus.*

1. It is professedly cross to the whole current of Scripture, which saith, *We are justified by faith*, and therefore not before faith; and to say that the meaning of these phrases is, that we are justified declaratively by faith, or to our sense and feeling *foro conscientie*, is a meer device; for justification is opposed to the state of unrighteousness and condemnation going before, which condemnation is not only declarative, and in the Court of Conscience, but real, and in the Court of Heaven: For so saith the Scripture expressly, *Joh. 3. 18. He that believeth not, is condemned already* and *ver. 36. The wrath of God abideth him*: and *Gal. 3. 22. The Scripture (which is the sentence in Gods Court) hath concluded all under sin*. Hence a second Argument riseth.

2. If a man be justified before faith, then an actual unbeliever is subject to no condemnation; but this is expressly cross to the letter of the Text, *He that believeth not is condemned already*, *Joh. 3. 18. and the wrath of God doth lye upon him*. The subjects of non-condemnation are those that be

Christ by faith, *Rom.* 8.1. not out of Christ  
by unbelief, *Rom.* 11.20. there is indeed a  
merited justification by Christs death, and a  
actual or exemplary justification in Christs  
resurrection, as in our Head and Surety; and  
both these were before not only our faith,  
but our very being; but to say that we are  
therefore actually justified before faith, be-  
cause our justification was merited before  
we had faith, gives us a just ground of as-  
serting that we are actually sanctified,  
whilst we are in the state of nature unsan-  
ctified, *Ephes.* 2.1, because our sanctification  
was merited by Christ before we had any be-  
ing in him.

We must indeed be made good trees by  
faith in Christs righteousness, before we can  
bring forth any good fruits of holiness.  
God makes us not good trees without being  
in Christ by faith, no more then we are bad  
trees in contracting *Adams* guilt without  
our being first in him: God gives us first his  
Son (offered in the Gospel and received by  
faith) and then gives us all other things with  
him; he doth not justify us without giving  
us his Son; but having first given him, gives  
us this also.

*Joh.* 14.  
3, 4, 5.

That sanctification doth not go before  
justification, may appear thus.

1. If guilt of *Adams* sin go before ori-  
ginal pollution, *Rom.* 5.12. then imputation  
of Christs righteousness before renewed  
and sanctification.

2. To

2. To place sanctification before justification, is quite cross to the Apostles practice (which is our pattern) who first sought to be found in Christ, *Phil. 3. 9.* (in the work of union) *not having his own righteousness* in the work of justification (which order follows that) *that he may then keep him in the power of his death and resurrection* in sanctification (here comes in sanctification) *if by any means he might attain to the resurrection of the dead in glorification* (the last of all.)

3. This is quite cross to the Apostles doctrine, which makes justification the cause of sanctification, and therefore must needs go before it; *Rom. 9.* as sin goes before spiritual & eternal death, so righteousness goes before spiritual life in sanctification, and eternal life in glory: the Lord holds forth Christ in the Gospel, first as our propitiation *Rom. 3. 24.* and then comes *dying to sin, and living to God* in sanctification, *cap. 6. 1.* Holiness is the end of our actual reconciliation *Col. 1. 21. 22.*

4. If sanctification go before justification by faith, then a Christians communion with Christ, goes before his union to him by faith; but our union is the foundation of communion; and it is impossible there should be communion without some precedent union, *1 Cor. 1. 30.* *Christ is our righteousness and sanctification;* unto whom read the beginning of the verse, and

shall see, it is only to those *that be in Christ*, which is by faith.

Let none say here (as some do) that we have union unto Christ, first by the Spirit, without faith, in order going before faith; For understanding of which, let us a little consider of our union unto Christ; Our union to Christ is not by the essential presence of the Spirit, for that is in every man, as the God-head is every where, in whom we live and move. This is common to the most wicked man, nay, to the vilest creature in the world. Hence it follows that our union is by some act of the Spirit peculiar to the Elect (who only shall have communion with Christ) working some real change in the soul (for of real, not relative union I now speak, this act cannot be those first acts of the Spirit of bondage (for they are common unto reprobates) they are therefore such acts as are essential unto the nature of union. Now look as disunion is the disjunction or separation of divers things one from another; so union is the conjunction or joyning of them together, that were before severed. Hence that act of the Spirit in uniting us to Christ, can be nothing else but the bringing back the Soul unto Christ, or the conjunction of the Soul unto Christ, and into Christ, by bringing it back to him, that before this lay like a dry bone in the valley separated from him. Thus, 1 Cor. 6. 17. *See that is joyned*, or  
(as

(as the word signifies) *glued to the Lord in one Spirit with him.* The Spirit therefore brings us to the Lord Christ, and so we are in him. Now *the coming of the soul to Christ* what is it but *faith?* *Joh. 6. 35.* Our union therefore is by faith, not without it; for by it only we that were once separated from him by sin, and especially by unbelief, *Heb. 3. 12.* are now come not only unto him as Iron unto the Lord-stone, *Joh. 6. 37.* but (which is most neer) into him, as branches into the vine, and so grow one with him; and hence those phrases in Scripture, *to believe in Christ, or into Christ,* I speak not this as if we were united to Christ without the Spirit on his part; (for the conjunction of things several must be mutual, if it be firm) I only shew that we are not united before faith by the Spirit unto Christ; but that we are by faith. (wrought by the Spirit) whereby on our part we are first conjoynd unto him, and then on his part by the person of the Spirit is most wonderfully united unto us. The Spirit puts forth variety of acts in the soul, as it acts us to good works, *'tis the spirit of obedience;* as it infuseth habits of grace, *'tis the spirit of sanctification;* as it assists us continually, and guides us to our end, and witnesseth favour, *'tis the Spirit of Adoption;* as it works fears of death and hell, *'tis the spirit of bondage;* but as it drives us from sin to Christ, *'tis the Spirit of union.*

an; and therefore to imagine union before and without faith by the Spirit, is but a spirit indeed, which when you come to feel it, you shall find it nothing, without flesh, or bones, or sinews. As our marriage union to Christ must have consent of faith on our part, wrought by the Spirit, or else the Lord Jesus is a vain suitor to us; so now the Spirit on Christ's part must apprehend our faith, and dwell in us, who otherwise shall suddenly go a whoring from him: 1 *Per.* 1. 5. *Eph.* 3. 17.

3. That vocation is not all one with sanctification, may appear thus.

1. Vocation is before Justification, *Rom.* 8. 30. But Sanctification is not before Justification, as we have proved, and therefore they are not the same.

2. Sanctification is the end of Vocation, 1 *Thes.* 4. 7. Therefore it is not the same with it.

3. Faith is the principal thing in Vocation; the first part of it being Gods call; the second part being our answer to that call, or in coming at that call, *Jer.* 3. 22. Now faith is no part of Sanctification strictly taken, because it is the means and instrument of our Justification and Sanctification, *Act.* 26. 18. Our hearts are said to be purified by faith, *Act.* 15. 9. not our lives only in the acts of holiness and purity, but our hearts in the habitual frame of them. *I live by the faith of*  
H the

the Son of God, saith Paul, We pass from death to life by faith, Joh. 5. 24. therefore it is no part of our spiritual life; You will not come to me (which is faith) that you may have life, Joh. 5. 40. Joh. 6. 50, 51. therefore faith is the instrumental means of life, and therefore no part of our life: as faith comes by hearing, and therefore hearing is no part of faith; so justification comes by faith, and therefore no part of sanctification: all our life both of justification and sanctification is laid up in Christ our head; this life according to Gods great plot, shall never be had but coming to Christ for it, Heb. 7. 25. else grace and Christ should not be so much dishonoured, Rom. 4. 16. It is of Faith, that it might be of Grace; Sanctification therefore is the grace applied by faith, faith the grace applying; by coming to Christ for it; we have it; and therefore have it not when first we come.

I am sorry to be thus large in less practical matters; yet I have thought it not unuseful, but very comfortable to a poor passenger, not only to know his journey's end, and the way in general to it, but also the several *Stadia* or *Towns* he is orderly to pass through; there is much wisdom of God to be seen, not only in his work, but in his manner and order of working; for want of which, I see many Christians in these days fall very foully into erroneous apprehension



apprehensions in their judgment, the immediate ground of many errors in practise; the objections made against what hath been delivered, are for the principal of them answered; the main end ( my beloved ) of propounding these things is, that you would look narrowly to your union, Oh take heed you miss not there: if you close with Christ, believe in Christ, and yet not cut off from your sin, viz. that Spirit of resistance of Christ, you are utterly and eternally undone: *This is the condemnation of the world*, not that men love darkness wholly, and hate light, but *that they love darkness more then light*; not that *the unclean spirit* is not *gone out*, but that he is not so cast out, as never to return again; the wound of all men, yea, the best of men that profess Christ, and yet indeed out of Christ, lyes in this: they were never severed from their sin by all their prayers, tears, fears, sorrows; and hence they never truly come to Christ; and hence perish in their sin.

Trouble me no more therefore in asking, Whether a Christian is in a state of happiness or misery in this condition? I answer he is preparatively happy, he is now passing from death to life, though not as yet wholly passed: Nor yet, whether there is any saving work before union? I answer No; for what is said, is one necessary ingredient to the working up of our union, as cutting off the branch from the old  
H 2 stock,

stock, is necessary to the ingrafting it into the new ; indeed, *without faith it is impossible to please God* ; nor do I say that this work doth please, i. e. it doth not pacifie God (for that is proper to Christs perfect righteousness received by Faith ) yet as it is a work of his own Spirit upon us, it is pleasing to him (as the after work of sanctification is) though it neither doth pacifie him : Nor do I see how this doctrine is any way opposite to the free offer of grace, and Christ, because it requires no more separation from sin, then that which drives them unto Christ ; nay, which is less, that makes them (by the power of the Spirit) not resist, but yield to Christ ; that he may come unto them and draw them : you cannot repent, nor convert your selves ; *Be converted therefore, saith Peter, Acts 3. 19. that you may receive remission of sins* ; and in this offer the Spirit works ; and verily, he that can truly receive Christ, without that sens of misery as separates him from his sin (as explained to you) let him believe notwithstanding all that which is said ; and the God of heaven speak peace to him ; his Faith shall not trouble me, if he be sure it shall not one day deceive himself.

Use 3.

Of a preparation for the hardness of mens hearts in these times ; as it is said, the Lord Jesus *mourned* when he saw the hardness of the peoples heart, *Mark. 3. 5.* are there not some so far from this, as that they take

take pleasure in their sins, they are sugar under their tongues, as sweet as sleep, nay, as their lives? and you come to pull away their limbs, when you come to pluck away their sins: though they have broke Sabbath, neglected prayer, despised the Word, hated and mocked at the Saints, been stubborn to their parents, curst and swore (which made *Peter go out and weep bitterly*) though lustful and wanton (which broke *Dauids bones*) though guilty of more sin; then there be moles in the Sun or Stars in Heaven, though their sins be crimson, and fill Heaven with their cry, and all the earth with their burden, yet they mourn not; never did it one hour together; nay, they cannot do it, because they will not; if you are weary and loaden, where are your unutterable groans? if wounded and bruised, where are your dolorous complaints? if sick, where is your equiry for a Physitian? if sad, where are your tears in the day, in the night, morning and evening alone by your selves, and in company with others? Oh how great is the wrath of God, hardning so many thousands at this day! whence comes it that Christ is not prized, but from this senselness? name any reason, why the blessed Gospel of peace, and all the sweet promises of life are undervalued, but from hence: and what do you hereby poor creatures, but only aggravate your sin, and make those that are little, exceeding great in the eyes

of God? whence it is that you treasure up  
*wrath against the day of wrath, Rom. 2. 2, 3,*  
 4, 5. This hardness is that which blunts the  
 edge of Gods Ordinances, whence Gods  
 poor Ministers sit sorrowful in their Closets,  
 seeing all Gods seed lost upon bare Rocks.  
 Oh this is the condition of many a man,  
 and which is most fearful, the means which  
 should make the heart sensible, make it  
 more proud and unienible. *Tyre* and *Sidon*,  
 and *Sodom*, are more fit to mourn  
 than *Chorazin* and *Capernaum*, that have  
 enjoyed humbling means long. Nay how  
 many be there that mourn out their mourn-  
 ings, confess out their confessions, and  
 by their own humiliations grow more sensi-  
 ble afterwards? Did we ever live in a  
 more impenitent secure age? We shall  
 seldom meet with one broken with sin,  
 but how few are broken from sin also?  
 And hence it is many a tall Cedar, that  
 were set down in the Table-Book for con-  
 verted men, once much humbled, and now  
 comforted; stay but a few years, you shall  
 see more dangerous sins of a second  
 growth; one turns covetous, another  
 drunkard, another proud, another a Se-  
 ctary, another a very dry leaf, a very for-  
 malist, another full of humorous opinions,  
 another laden with scandalous lusts: wo to  
 you that lament not now; for you shall  
 mourn. Dost thou think that Christ should  
 ever wipe off thy tears that sheddest none at  
 all?

all? Dost thou think to rest in joy, that  
sowest not with these showers? Verily  
God will make his Word good, *Prov. 29.*  
*1. He that hardens his own heart shall perish*  
*suddenly*; Hear this you secure sorrowless  
sinner, if ever Gods hand be stretched  
out suddenly against thee, in blasting thy  
estate, snatching away thy children, the  
wife of thy bosome, the husband of thy  
delight; in staining thy name, vexing thee  
with debts and crosses, sharp and sore,  
or lingering sicknesses; know that all this  
comes upon thee for a hard heart: but  
Oh mourn for it now you Parents, Chil-  
dren, Servants, the Tokens of death are  
upon you; desire the Lord to break your  
hearts for you: lye under Gods Hammer,  
be not above the word, and suffer the  
Lord to take away that which grieves him  
most, even thy stony heart, because  
it grieves thee least: meditate much of thy  
woful condition, chew the bitter pill;  
remember death and rotting in the grave,  
that many are now in hell for thy sins,  
that Christ must dye, or thou dye for the  
least sin; remember how patient and  
long suffering the Lord hath been to thee,  
and how long he hath groaned under thy  
burthen, that it may be, though he would,  
yet he cannot bear the load long; let these  
things be mused on, that thy heart may be  
at last sorrowful before it be too late. But  
Oh the sad estate of many with us, that can

mourn for any evil, except it be for the greatest, sin and death, and wrath that lye upon them.

Use 3.

Of exhortation, Labour for this sense of misery, for this Spirit of compunction: how can you believe in Christ, that feel not your misery without him? a broken Christ cannot do thee good without a broken heart; be afflicted and mourn ye sinners, turn your laughter into mourning, tremble to think of that wrath, which burns down to the bottom of hell, and under which the eternal Son of God sweat drops of blood: great sins which thou knowest thou art guilty of, cause great guilt, and great hardness of heart, and therefore are seldom forgiven or subdued without great affliction of Spirit; they have loaded the Lord long, they must load thee. Little sins are usually slighted and extenuated, and therefore the Lord accounts them great; and therefore the soul must be in bitterness for them, before the Lord will pass them by: It is not every trouble that will serve the turn; look that it be such as separates thy soul from sin, or else it will separate between thy soul and God. I know it is not in your power to break your own hearts, no more then to make the Rocks to bleed, yet remember he that bids thee *cast up and prepare the way of the Lord*, he hath promised that *every mountain shall be brought low, and the crooked ways made plain*.

Isa 43.4

tain, and the rough smooth, and the valleys filled; He only can, do it for thee, and will do it for some, it may be for thee; he that broke the heart of *Manasseh* and *Paul* after their blood and blasphemy, when they never desired any such thing, he can break thine much more when thou art desiring him to do it for thee; here many of you that fear you were never humbled nor burthened enough; I say fear it still, fear least there be a stone in the bottom, not so as to discourage and drive thy soul from Christ, but so as to feel a greater need of his grace to soften thy heart; and take thy senseless away: the Lord doth purposely command thee to plow up thy fallow ground, that thou mightest feel thy impotency so to do, and come to him to take it away: every thing will harden thee more and more, until the Lord come and take thy stony heart away by his own hand: all Gods kindness will make thee more bold to sin, and all Gods judgements more fierce and obstinate in sinne, unlesse the Lord put to his hand; if *Pharaohs* heart be softened for a time, it will grow hard again, if the Lord take it not away: The means therefore for to get this compunction is,

1. To feel the evil of thy hard heart; no surer token of reprobation then hardness, if continued in; especially for thy heart to grow hard under or after softning means, as it was in *Pharaoh*.

Pse 4.

2. To look up to the Lord in all Ordinances, that he would take it away.

Have not you great cause of abundant thankfulness, into whose hearts the Lord hath let in fears and sorrows, concerning your estates? the blind world looks upon all troubles of conscience, as temptations of the devil to despair, and the very way to run mad; and consider what the Lord hath done for you that have such; what if the Lord had left you without all feeling, as those in *Ephes. 4. 19.* what if the Lord had smitten you with a spirit of slumber, as those, *Rom. 11. 8.* would not your estates have been then lamentable? and have you no hearts to acknowledg his unspeakable goodness in a weakning of you, in shaking thy very foundations? dost thou think that any ever had such a hard heart as thou hast? dost not, say so in secret before the Lord sometimes? Oh then what rich grace is this, to give thee any sense and feeling of thy sin and danger by it, though it be never so little in thine eyes! some think these terrors are a judgment; it is true, if they were merely imaginary, or worldly and desperate; but saith the Apostle, *2 Cor. 7. 9. I thank God I made you sorry.* Suppose thy sorrow should be only in regard of the punishment of sin; yet this is the Lords goodness to make thy heart so far sensible; that once didst go like a beast to the slaughter, fearing no danger at all; the very means



to prize favour from God, is to feel wrath  
as well as sin) and the very reason why the  
Lord hath let thee feel thy punishment  
heavy, is, that thy soul might feel the evil of  
sin, by considering, that if the fruits be so  
bitter, what is then the cause? be not there-  
fore weary of thy burthen, so as to think the  
Lord pawns out his vengeance on thee while  
thy trouble remains; Oh consider that this  
is the hand of the Lord Jesus, and that he is  
now about to save thee, when he comes to  
work any compunction in thee; especially  
such, as whereby he doth not only cut thy  
heart with fears and sorrows, but cut thee  
out from thy sin; so far only as humbles  
thee and drives thee to the Lord Christ to  
take them away. And so I come to the third  
particular of Humiliation.

Jer. 30.  
15.

#### SECT. IV.

*The third Act of Christs Power, which is  
Humiliation.*

**T**HE Lord Jesus having thus broken the  
heart by compunction, is not like a  
foolish builder that leaves off his work be-  
fore he hath fully finished it, and therefore  
having thus wounded a poor sinner, he goes  
on to humble him also; for though in a  
large sense, a wounded contrite sinner is an  
humble sinner, yet strictly taken there is a  
great

great difference between them ; and therefore he is said to dwell with the contrite and humble, i. e. not only with those that be wounded with sin, but humbled for sin, although it is certain the soul is seldom or never effectually wounded, but it is always humbled at the same time. A man may be wounded sore even unto death, and yet the pride of the man is such, that he will not fall down before him that smites him. So it is with many a poor sinner, the Lord hath sorely wounded him that he will resist no more, yet he will rather fly from his duties to heal him, or dye alone, and sinke under his discouragements, than stoop. O beloved, man must down, before the Lord Christ will take him up, and therefore in *Isa. 40. 5, 6, 7.* the glory of the Lord is promised to be revealed: but what means must be used for this end? God saith the Lord: *What shall I cry?* saith the Lord answers, that *All flesh is grass*, and that *the glory of it fades*, and that *the people are this grass*, i. e. not only their mens sins are vile, but that themselves also are grass; nay, their glory and excellency is withering and fading; and therefore not only mountains must be pulled down, but all flesh, and the glory of it wither, before the Lord shall be revealed, and I shall briefly open these four things.

1. What is this Humiliation.
2. What need there is of it.
3. What means the Lord useth to work it.
4. What measure of it is here required.

What is this Humiliation?

Look as pride is that sin whereby a man conceiveth of some good in himself, and seeking some excellency to himself, exalts himself above God; so Humiliation (in this place) is that work of the Spirit, whereby the soul being broken off from self-conceit, and self confidence in any good it hath or doth, submitteth unto, or lieth under God, to be disposed of as he pleaseth, 1 Pet. 5. 6. Levit. 26. 41. That looketh with compunction cuts the sinner off from that evil that is in him, so humiliation cuts it off from all high conceits, and self-confidence, of that good which is in him, or which he seeks might be in him, and so the soul is abased before God.

*Ans. 1.*

What need or necessity is there of this? Because,

1. When the Lord hath wounded the hearts of his Elect, this is the immediate work of their hearts, (if the Lord prevent them not by his grace, as many times he doth) they look to what good they have, or if they find little or none, they then seek for some in themselves, that thereby they may heal their wound, because they think thus, that

*Ans. 2.*

that as their sins have provoked God to anger against them, so if now they can repent and leave those sins, or if not, repent and be sorry for them; if now they pray, hear, and do as others do, they have some hope that this will heal their wound, and pacifie the Lord towards them; when they see there is no peace in a sinful course, they will therefore try if there be any to be found in a good course: And look as Adam when he saw his own shame and nakedness hid himself from God in the bushes, and covered his nakedness with figg-leaves; the soul not being able to endure to see its own nakedness and vileness, nor know Christ Jesus; and he being far to seek doth therefore labour to cover his wickedness and sinfulness, which now it feels by some of these figg-leaves. Hence, *Micah 6. 7.* they enquire *what will they should come before the Lord,* (now they bring rivers of oyl, or thousands of lambs, or the first born of their body, to remove the sin of their soul? Paul did account these duties *gaine*, and set them at a high rate, because he thought that God did reward himself. When the Lord hath wounded the soul, the first voyce it speaks, is, *What shall I do?* Do? saith conscience, leave thy sins, do as we'l as others, do with thy might and strength, pray, hear, and confer, God accepts of good desires, and requires no more of any man but to

what he can. Hence the soul plies both oare though against wind and tide, and strives, and wrangles with his sins, and hopes one day to be better, and here he rests: And observe it, look as sin is his greatest evil, so the casting away of his sins, and seeking to be better, is very sweet to him; and being so sweet, rests in what he hath, and seeks for what he wants, and so hopes all will be well one day, and so stays here; although (God knows) it be without Christ, nor cannot rest on him, though he hath heard of him a thousand times. And hence it is, if they cannot do any thing to ease themselves, then their hearts sink, or it may be quarrel with God, that he makes them not better. But Beloved, it is wonderful to see how many times men rest in a little they have and do.

2. But whilst it is thus with the soul, he is incapable of Christ; for he that trusts to other things to save him, or makes himself his own Saviour, or rests in his duties without a Saviour, he can never have Christ to save him, *Rom. 9. 32.* it is said, the Jews sought Christ's righteousness, *because they sought it by faith;* but sought salvation by their own righteousness. *He that maketh flesh his arm* (as all duties and endeavours of man be, when trusted to) the Lord saith, *Cursed be that man, Jer. 17. 5, 6.* Onely the Lord doth not leave his Elect here; he is married unto the Law, *Rom. 7. can-*  
not

Gal. 3.

19

not be match't unto Christ, till he be first divorced, not from the duties themselves, but from trusting to them, and resting in them; and therefore saith *Paul*, *I through the Law am dead to it, that I might live unto God.* He that trusteth to riches cannot enter into the Kingdom of Heaven, no more then a Camel through a needles eye, because it is too bigg for so narrow a room: so he that trusteth to his duties and abilities, is too bigg to enter in by Christ; the Lord must cut of this spirit, and lay it low, and make it stoop, as vile before God, before it can have Christ in this estate; the Lord must not only cut it off from this self-confidence in duties, but also so far forth as that the soul may lye under God, to be disposed of as he pleaseth; and the reason is, because such a soul is unwilling to stoop, is unhumbl'd; and he that is so, doth not only on his part resist God, but the Lord also resist him, *Jam. 4. 7, 8.* and hence you shall observe many a one hath lain long under distress of conscience, because they have either rested in their duties, which could not quiet, or because they have not so cast off their confidence in them, so as to lye down quietly before God, that he may do what he will with them; being so long objects of Gods resistance, not of his grace. By what means doth the Lord work this?

*Ans.*

In general, by the Spirit, immediately acting upon the soul; but after a Christian

is in Christ, he hath by the virtue of faith, some power to humble himself; but now the Spirit of Christ doth it immediately by his own omnipotent hand; else the proud heart would never down: For we are first created in Christ *unto good works*; before we do put forth good works. These acts of self-confidence may not be stirring in all Christians; but in all men there is this frame of spirit, never to come to Christ, if they can make any thing else serve to save them; and therefore the Spirit cuts off this sinful frame in all the Elect; he hews the roughness and pride of spirit off, that it may lye stil upon the foundation it is now prepared for. Now though the Spirit works this, yet 'tis not without the Word; the Word it works chiefly by, is the *Law*. *I through the Law am dead* to it (i.e. from seeking any life or help from it) *that I might live unto God*.

Eph. 2.  
10.

Gal. 3.  
19.

Now the Law doth this by a fourfold act.

1. By discovering the secret corruption of the soul in every duty, which it never saw before; It once thought I shall perish for my sinne; if I continue therein, without confession of them, or sorrow for them; but it also did think what this confession, sorrow, and trouble for sin will serve to live it, and make God accept of it: but the Law (while the soul is earnestly striving against his sin) discovering that in all these there is nothing but sin, even secret

sins it did never see before, hereupon it  
 begins thus to think, Can these be the  
 means of saving me, which being so sinful,  
 cannot but be the very causes of condemn-  
 ing of me? I know I must perish for the  
 least sin; and now I see that in all I do,  
 I can do nothing else but sin. What  
 made *Paul alive without the Law*? You  
 shall find, *Rom. 7. 7.* it was because he  
 did not know that *lust*, or the secret con-  
 cupiscences and first risings of the soul to  
 sin, were *sin*: he saw not these secret evils  
 in all that which he did: and hence he rest-  
 ed in his duties, as one alive without Christ;  
 but the Lord by discovering this, let him see  
 what little cause he had to lift up his hand  
 for any good he did: So it is here, when  
 the soul sees that all its righteousness is  
 menstruous cloth, polluted with sin,  
 now those duties which like reeds were  
 trusted to before, run into the hand, my  
 heart of a poor sinner; and therefore now  
 it feels little cause of resting on them any  
 longer: now it sees the infinite holiness  
 of God by the exceeding spiritualness of  
 the law, it begins to cry out, How can  
 stand or appear before him with such con-  
 tinual pollutions?

2. By irritating or stirring up of original  
 corruption, in making more of that to ap-  
 pear then ever before; that if the soul  
 thinks, all I do is defiled with sin, yet  
 my heart is good, and so it rests there;



Lord therefore stirres that dunghill, and lets it see a more hellish nature then ever before, in that the holy and blessed command of God (to its feeling) makes it worse, more rebellious, more averse from God:

*When the commandment came sinne revived,* saith Paul, and that which was for life was death to him, sin taking occasion by the Law:

and hence Paul came to be slain and dye to all his self-confidence. It was one of Lu-

thers first positions in opposing the Popes indulgencies, that *Lex & voluntas sunt duo aversarii sine gratia irreconciliabiles*:

for the Law and mans will meeting together, the one holy, the other corrupt, make fierce opposition when the soul is under a

lively work of the Law; and by this irritation of the Law, the Lord hath this end in his Elect, to make them feel what wretched hearts they have, because that which is

in itself a meanes of good, makes them (through mans corruption) more vile to their feeling then ever before; and hence

comes those sad complaints on a soul under the humbling hand of Christ, I am now worse then ever I was, I grow every

day worse and worse, I have lost what once I had, I could once pray, and seek God with delight, and never well but when one

duty was done, to be in another; but now I am worse, all that joy and sweetnesse in seeking of him, and in holy walking is

gone; I could once mourne for sin, but now

Rom. 7.

9, 10, 11.

now a hard heart takes hold of me, that I have not so much as a heart to any thing that is good, nor to shed a tear for the greatest evil. It is true, I confess you may grow (to your feeling) worse and worse, and it is fit you should feel it; that the Lord hereby might pull down your proud heart, and make you ly low; it is the Lord's glorious wisdom to wither all your flowers, which refreshed you without Christ, that you might feel a need of him; and therefore I say the Lord pulls away all those broken planks the soul once floated and rested upon, that the soul may sink in a holy despair of any help from any good it hath, the Lord shakes down all building on a sandy foundation; and then the soul cries out, It is ill resisting here.

3. By loading, tyring, and wearying the soul by its own endeavours, until it can stir no more; for this is in every man by nature; when he sees that all he doth is sinful, and all he hath, his heart and nature to be most sinful; yet he will not yet come out of himself, because he hopes though he be for this present thus vile, yet he hopes for future time his heart may grow better, and himself do better then now; and hence it is that he strives, and seeks, and endeavours to his utmost to set up himself again, and gain cure to all his troubles by his duties. Now the Law, whose office is to command, but not to give strength, and the

Spirit that should give strength withdrawing it self, because it knows the soul would rest therein without Christ; hence it comes to pass that the soul feeling it self to labour only in the fire, and smoke, and to be still as miserable, and sinful as ever before, hereupon it is quite tyred out, and sits down weary, not only of its sin, but of its work, and now cries out, I see now what a vile and undone wretch I am, I can do nothing for God or for my self, only I can sin and destroy my self; all that I am is vile, and all that I do is vile; I now see that I am indeed poor, and blind, and miserable and naked; and the truth is, beloved, here comes in the greatest dejections of spirit; for when the Lord smites the soul for sin, it hopes that by leaving of sin and doing better, it may do well; but when it sees that there is no hope here of healing the breach between God and it self, now it falls low indeed: and I take this to be the true meaning of *Mat. 11: 28. Ye that labour,* &c. You that are wearied in your own way, seeking rest to your souls by your own hard labour or works (as the word *to labour* signifies) and are tyred out therein, and so are now laden indeed with sin, and the heavy pressure of that, finding no ease in all that which you do: *Come to me,* saith Christ, *and you shall have find rest unto your souls:* The Jews seeking to establish their own righteousness, seeking, I say,

if by any means they might establish it, lost Christ: the Lord therefore will make his Elect know they shall seek here for ease in vain: and therefore tires them out.

4. By clearing up the equity and justice of God in the Law; if the Lord should never pity nor pardon it, nor shew any respect or favour to it; for this is the frame of every mans heart, if he cannot find rest in his duties and indeavours, as he once expected he should, but sees sin and weakness, death and condemnation wrapping him about (like *Jonah's* weeds) in all he doth; then his heart sinks, and quarrels and falls off farther from Christ by discouragement, and grows secretly impatient, that there should be no mercy left for him, because it thinks now the eternal purpose is to exclude him; for if there were any thoughts of peace towards him, he should have found peace before now, having so earnestly and frequently sought the Lord, and having done so much, and forsaken his sinful waies, according to his own commandment from him; and hence it is, you shall find a certain truth, that the soul is turned back as far from God, by sinking discouraging sorrows for sin, as ever it was to a state of security by the pleasures of sin; and hence sometimes it thinks it is vain to seek any more, and hence leaves off duties; and conscience force it to them, yet it sinks again, because its foot is not established upon

Lam. I.  
16.

the rock Christ, but upon the weakness of the waters of its own abilities and endeavours; what therefore should the soul do in this case, to come to God? it knows not, it cannot; fly from him it dare not, it shall not; the Spirit therefore by revealing how equal and just it is for the Lord never to regard or look after it more, because it hath sinned, and is still so sinful, makes it hereby to fall down prostrate in the dust before the Lord, as worthy of nothing but shame and confusion, and so kisseth the rod, and turns the other cheek unto the Lord even striking of him, acknowledging if the Lord shew mercy, it will be wonderful, if not, yet the Lord is righteous, and therefore hath no cause to quarrel against him, for denying special mercy to him, to whom he doth not owe a bit of bread. And now the soul is indeed humbled, because it submits to be disposed of as God pleaseth; thus the Church in her humiliation, Lam. 3. 22. having in the former part of the Chapter drunk *the worm-wood and the gall*, at last lies down and professeth, *It is the Lords mercy it is not consumed*; and vers. 29. *he puts his mouth to the dust, if there may be any hope*; and vers. 39. *Why should living man complain for the punishment of his sin?* You think the Lord doth you wrong, and neglects your good and his own glory too, if he doth not give you peace and pardon, grace and mercy, even to

1 Cor.  
11. 31.

Levit.  
10. 3.

the utmost of your asking, and then think you have hence good cause to fret and fume, and be discouraged: No, no, the Lord will pull down those mountains, those high thoughts, and make you lye low at his feet, and acknowledge that it is infinite mercy you are alive, and not consumed; and that there is any hope or possibility of mercy, and that you are out of the nethermost pit, and that if he should never pity you, yet he doth you no wrong, but that which is equal and just; and that it is fit your sinful froward wills should stoop to his holy, righteous and good will, rather then that it should stoop and be crooked according unto yours. Believe it brethren, *he that judgeth not himself thus, shall be judged of the Lord*; how can you have mercy that will set your selves up in Gods Sovereign Throne to dispose of it, and will not lye down humbly under it, that it may dispose of you? for are you worthy of it? hath the Lord any need of you? have you provoked him exceedingly? was there ever any that dealt worse with him then you? Oh beloved lye low here, and learn of the Church, *Micah 7. 9. I will bear the indignation of the Lord, because I have sinned against him.* It was a most blessed frame of spirit in Aaron, when he saw God and against him in cutting off his children, and Aaron held his peace; so if the Lord should cast thee off, cut thee off, never

take pleasure in such a polluted broken vessel unfit for any use for him, hold thou thy peace, quarrel not, be silent before him, and say as they did, *2 Chron. 12. 5. The Lord is righteous, but I am vile; let him do with me what seems good in his own eyes;* and thus the Lord Jesus by the Law doth dead the soul to the Law, until it be made to submit like wax, or like clay to the hand of the Potter, to frame it a vessel to what use he pleaseth; and as the Apostle most excellently, *Rom. 7. divorceth it from its first husband (i. e. Sin and the Law)* that it may be married unto *Jesus Christ*. In a word, when the Lord Christ hath made the soul feel not only its inability to help it self, and so saith Paul, *Gal. 2. 20. It is not I, but also its own unworthiness, that the Lord should help it, and so cries out with Job, Behold, I am vile; now at this instant, 'cis vas capax; a vessel capable (though unworthy of any grace, Jam. 4. 6.*

The last question remains, What measure of Humiliation is here necessary?

Look, as so much conviction is necessary which begets compunction, and so much compunction as breeds humiliation; so, so much humiliation is necessary as introduceth faith, or as drives the soul out of it self unto Christ: For as the next end of conviction is compunction, and that of compunction is humiliation; so the next end of humiliation

*Ans.*

miliation is faith, or coming unto Christ which we shall next speak unto:

And hence it is that the Lord calls unto *the weary and heavy laden to come* unto him, *Mat. 11. 27.* So much as makes you come for rest in Christ, so much is necessary, and no more. If any can come without being thus laden and weary in some measure, let them come and drink of the water of life freely; but a proud heart that will make it self its own Saviour, will not come to the Lord Jesus to be his Saviour; he that will be his own Physician, so long cannot send out for another. Nay, let me fall one degree lower, if the soul cannot come to Christ (as who feel not themselves unable when the Lord comes to draw?) and find not the Lord Jesus coming unto them, to draw them and compel them in; yet if the soul be so far humbled, as not to resist the Lord, by quarrelling with him, and at him, as unworthy of the least smile, as worthy of all frowns; verily the Lord will come to it, and no more is requisite then this, and thus much certainly is: For thus the whole Scripture runs, *He gives grace to the humble*, Jam. 4. 6. *I dwell with the contrite and humble*, Isa. 57. 16. *The poor afflicted shall not alwaies be forgotten*, Psal. 9. 12. 18. When their *uncircumcised hearts are humbled*, so as to accept of the punishment of their iniquity, the Lord then remembers his Covenant, Lev. 26. 41, 42. Conceive



it thus: There can be no union to Christ, while there is a power of resistance and opposition against Christ. The Lord Christ must therefore in order of nature (for I now speak not of order of time) first remove ~~prohibens~~, remove this resistance, before he can, and that he may unite. I do not mean resistance of the frame of grace, but (as was said) of the Lord of grace, whereby he comes to work it.

Now there is a double resistance, or two parts of this resistance, like a knife without edges.

1. A resistance of the Lord by a secret unwillingness that the Lord should work grace: Now this the Lord removes in compunction, and no more brokenness for sin, or from sin is necessary there then that.

2. A resistance of the Lord by sinking discouragements, and a secret quarrelling with him, in case the soul imagines he will not come to work grace, or manifest grace. Now this the Lord takes away in humiliation; and no more is necessary here, then the removal of the power of this which makes the soul in the sense of its own infinite vileness and unworthiness, not to quarrel at the Lord, and devil-like grow fierce and impatient before and against the Lord, in case he should never help it, never pity it, never succour it; *the Lord will not forsake for ever*, if the soul thus lies  
down

down, and puts its mouth in the dust, Lam. 3. 30, 31.

Which consideration is of unspeakable use and consolation, to every poor empty nothing, that feels it self unable to believe, and the Lord forsaking it, from helping it to believe. And I have seen it constantly, that many a chosen vessel never hath been comforted till now, and ever comforted when now; they never knew what hurt them till they saw this, and they have immediately felt their hurt healed, when this hath been removed. In comforting Christians under deep distress, tell them of Gods grace and mercy, and the riches of both, you do but torment them the more, that there should be so much, and they have no part nor share in it, and think they never shall, because this is not the immediate way of cure; tell them rather when they are full of these complaints, that they are as they speak, vile and sinful, and therefore worthy never to be accepted of God, and that they have no cause to wonder that they have their lives, and are on this side hell, and so turn all that they say to humiliation and self-loathing; verily you shall then see, if the Lord intends good, he will by this do them good, and the weakest Christian that cannot come to Christ, you shall see first or last shall see cause to ly down, and be silent and not quarrel, though the Lord should never come to him. And that this is necessary

cessary, may appear thus. Otherwise,

1. The Lord should not advance the riches of his grace; the advancement of grace cannot possibly be without the humiliation and abasement of the creature; the Lord not only saves, but calls things that are *not*, that no flesh might glory, 1 Cor. 1. 28, 29.

2. Otherwise the Lord should not be Lord and disposer of his own grace, but a fustull creature who quarrels against God, if it be not disposed of, not as the Lord will, but as the creature will. If a stranger comes to our house, and will have what he wants, and if he hath not, he quarrels and contends with the Master of the house, what would he say? Away proud beggar, dost thou think to be Lord of what I have? dost draw thy knife to stab me, If I do not please thee and give thee thy asking? no, thou shalt know that I will do with my own as I see good, thou shalt lie down on the dust of my threshold before I give thee any thing. So 'tis with the Lord, *It is not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that sheweth mercy.* It is his principal name, *I will be merciful to whom I will be merciful*; and therefore if you will not believe me, yet believe the Lords oath, *Isaiah 45. 23. Unto me shall every knee bow,* and do you come to Lord it over him, and quarrel, and fret, and sink, and grow fullen, and vex, if the Lord stoop not unto your desires? No, no, you must and shall lie

lie upon his threshold; nay, he will make thee lay thy neck upon the block, as worthy of nothing but cutting off, and then when this valley is filled, all flesh shall see the glory of the Lord, Isa. 40. 5.

Thus humiliation is necessary in the measure mentioned; not that I deny any subsequent humiliation after a Christian is in Christ, arising from the sense of Gods favour in Christ, then which nothing makes a Christian of an Evangelical Spirit more ashamed of himself: yet I dare not exclude this which is antecedent, arising from the spirit of power, immediately subduing the soul to Christ, that it may be exalted by Christ, 1 Pet. 5. 6. It is true, all things that pertain to life and godliness are received by faith, 1 Pet. 1. 3. yet faith it self is a saving work, which is not received by another preceding faith. Faith therefore is to be exempted, not only as begotten in us, but as it is in the begetting of it in the conviction and humiliation of every sinner.

Use 1.

Hence see what is the great hinderance between the mercy of God and the soul of many a man; if it be not some sin and hardness of heart under it, whereby he cares not for Christ to deliver him, then 'tis some pride of spirit arising from some good he hath, whereby he feels no need of Christ, hoping his own duties shall save him, or else is above Christ, and not under him, willing to be disposed of by him. And hence

the

the Lord makes this high way of mercy, *Levit. 29. 40.* if first they shall *confess* their sin, secondly *humble themselves*, (both which I know the Lord must work) then *he will remember his Covenant*. Look as it is with a vessel before it can be fit for use, it must first pass through fire, and the earth and dross severed from it, then it must be made holy and empty, which makes it *vas capax*, a vessel capable of receiving that which shall be poured into it; if (Oh Brethren) the Lord hath some vessels of glory which he prepares before-hand and makes capable of glory, *Rom. 9. 21. 22.* if the Lord doth not sever you from sin in compunction, and empty you of your selves in humiliation, you cannot receive Christ, nor mercy, you cannot hold them; and if ever you miss of Christ by faith, your wound lies here. How many be there at this day, that were once profane and wicked, but now by some terrours and outward restraints upon them, they leave their sins, and say they loath them, and purpose never to run riot as they have done, and hence because they think themselves very good, or to have some good, they fall short of Christ, and are still in the gall of bitterness in the midst of all evil. It were the happiness of some men if they did not think themselves to have some good, because this is their Christ. O you that live under precious means, and have many fears you may per-  
rish

will and be deceived at the last: But why  
 do you fear? I know you will answer, Of  
 some secret and unknown sin may be my  
 ruine; It is true, you do well to have a  
 godly jealousie thereof. But remember  
 this also, not only some sin, but some  
 good thou thinkest thou hast, and reatest  
 in without Christ, and lifting thee up  
 above Christ, may as easily prove thy ruine,  
 because a mans own righteousness rested in  
 doeth not only hid mens sins, but strength-  
 ens them in some sin by which men perish;  
*Trusting to ones own righteousness, and com-  
 mitting iniquity* are couples, *Ezek. 33. 13.*  
 Nor do I hereby run into the trenches of  
 that wicked generation of the Familists,  
 denying all inherer graces; evidence of  
 favour from any Christian obedience, or  
 sanctification in holy duties? or that a  
 Christian should profanely cast off all du-  
 ties, because they cannot save themselves  
 by them: No, no, the Lord will search  
 with candles one day for such Tons of dark-  
 ness; and exclude such foolish *Virgins*,  
 that they have neither oyl in their vessels,  
 nor light in their lamps: I only speak of  
 that good, that righteousness which is rest-  
 ed in without Christ, and lifts up men a-  
 bove Christ, which indeed and in truth is  
 not true righteousness, but only a true  
 shadow of it. And therefore as *Beza*  
 well observes from, *Rom. 9. 31. Why did*  
*not Israel that followed after righteousness*

attain it? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the Law: They were not fruits of sincere obedience to the Law, but as it were the works of the Law; now this, saith the Apostle, ver. 33. is the *stumbling-stone in Sion*. Christ will have all flesh vail, and be stript naked, and made nothing before him, before they shall ever be built upon him; now this men stumble at, they must bring something to him, they will not be wise, emptinesse, and nothingnesse, that he may be all to them; verily observe yourselves, and you shall find, if there be little humiliation, there is little of *Christ*; if much humiliation, much of *Christ*; if unconstant humiliation, uncertain fruition of *Christ*; if real humiliation, real possession of *Christ*; if false humiliation, imaginary fruition of *Christ*. Know it, you cannot perish if you fall not short here, you must perish if you do.

Use. 2.

Be exhorted therefore to lye down in the dust before the Lord, and under the Lord; nay, intreat the Lord that he wou'd put thee upon his wheel, and mould thy heart to his will; why will you rest in any good you have? O remember thy father was a *Syrian* ready to perish; and thy self polluted, an infinite endless evil. Whatever good thou dost, is it not a polluted stream, of a more polluted spring? nay suppose the Spirit works any good in thee, yet is it not polluted by thy unclean heart? Nay, suppose any actions should be

K

perfect

perfect, yet remember that the Lord spared not the Angels that sinned; perfection present cannot satisfy justice for pollution past. Cry out therefore and say, O Lord, now I see not only that my sin is vile, but that my self and all my righteousness is vile also; and now though the Lord stands at a distance, speaks no peace, hears no prayers, yet because thou art very vile, lie down under him, that if he will he may tread upon thee, and thereby exalt himself, as well as lift thee up and exalt thee. Be not careless whether the Lord help or no, but be humbled, not to quarrel in case he should not: For,

1. Suppose thou art not only miserable, but sinful, and the Lord, thou saist, takes it not away, yet remember, that to quarrel with God for withdrawing his hand, is a sin also, *Lam. 3. 39.* and wilt thou add sin to sin?

2. Why art thou quiet and still, when the Lord denies thee any common mercy? Is it not because the Lord will have it so? Now look as we say of him that hates sin, that he hates all sin; so he that is pleased with Gods good pleasure in any one thing because of his good pleasure in it, upon the same ground will at least desire to stoop in every thing. Suppose therefore be the Lords good pleasure to deny thee mercy, I grant you must pray for it, with submission to the good will of the Lord.



Lord, saying, the Lords will is good, but mine is evil, otherwise thou hast no meekness in any thing, that art not meekly subject to his will in every thing.

3. The greatest pride that is in man appears here ; for suppose the Lord should deny thee bread, or water, or clothes, was it your duty to murmur now ? nay, was it not pride, if the heart would not lie down and say, Lord I am worthy to have my bread pluckt from my mouth, and my cloaths from my back.

Now if it be pride to murmur in case the Lord denies you smaller matters, the offals of this life, dost not thou see that its far greater pride for thee to sink and quarrel with him if he denies thee greater, and the things of another life ? is he bound to give thee greater, that doth not owe thee the least ? Suppose a beggar murmur at thy door, if thou dost deny him bread, or a cup of drink, wilt thou not account him a proud stout beggar ? but if thou givest him that, and then he quarrel and murmur at thee, because thou dost not give him a thousand pound, or thy whole estate when he asks it, will you not say, I never met with the like insolency ? The Lord gives you lives, blessed be his name, but you ask for treasures of grace and mercy, thousands of pounds, Christ himself, and all that he is worth, and the Lord seems to deny you, and now you sink, and grow sullen, and discontent, and quar-

rel, and murmur at God, nor directly but secretly and slyly ; may not the Lord now say, Was there ever such pride and insolency ? And therefore as Christ spake of himself, *Joh. 12. 24, 25. A corn of wheat cannot live unless it dye first*; so know it, you shall never live with Christ, unless you dye and perish in your selves, unless you be sown, and lye under the clods of your own wretchedness, faith will never spring up in such a soul. As 'tis in burnings, the fire must be first taken out, before there can be any healing ; so this impatient spirit which torments the soul, must first be removed, before the Lord will heal thee.

4. Consider the approaching times ; I do believe the Lord at this day is coming out to shake of all nations, all hearts, all consciences, all conditions whatsoever, and to tear and rend you from your choicest blessings, peace, and plenty, both external and internal also ; for there is need of it, our age grows full and proud, and wanton, a mans price is fallen in the market, unless his locks and new fashions commend him to the world. Oh consider when God comes to rend all from you, then you may find a need of the exercise of this duty ; it may be the time is coming wherein you shall have nothing to support your hearts, you shall find rest in no way but this ; I know assurance of Gods love may quiet you ; but what if the Lord shake all your foundations, and de-

prive you of that ? what will you do then ? and therefore as *Zephany cap: 2. 3.* having foretold of the evil day, cries unto his hearers, *Seek meekness ye meek of the earth ; seek meekness, to say I to you ; for you will find all little enough. Come down from thy Throne, and be the footstool and threshold of Christ Jesus, before the days of darkness come upon you ; be content to be a cypher, a stepping-stone, the very offal of the world.*

But you will say, Wherein should I express this humiliation and subjection ? *Quest.*

Be highly thankful for any little the Lord gives, *Lam. 3. 22. 23.* *Ans. I.*

Be humble and judge thy self worthy of nothing when the Lord denies, and verily you shall find the Lord Jesus ere long speaking peace unto you, and giving thee rest in his bosome, that now art quietly contented to lye still at his feet. *2.*

For some helps thereunto,

1. Remember whose thou art, *viz.* the Lords clay, and he thy Potter, and therefore may do with thee *what he will*, *Rom. 9. 20.*

2. Remember what thou art, *viz.* a polluted vessel, a kind of infinite endless evil, as I have oft said ; see the picture of thy own vileness in the damned in hell who are full, and shall through all eterniry pour out all manner of evil, *Job 40. 3, 4.*

3. Remember what thou hast been, and how

how long thou hast made war against Christ with all thy might and heart, and strength; why should the Lord therefore choose thee before others, *Jer. 3. 5.* when as (ask thy conscience, was there ever such a wretch since the world began as thou hast been?

4. Remember what thou wilt be, fit for no use to Jesus Christ, good for nothing, but to pollute his holy Name when thou meddest with it; and why should the Lord take up such a dry leaf, *Isa. 64. 6.* and breathe upon such a dry bone?

5. Remember how good the Lords will is, even when it crosseth thine; he shall have infinite glory by all his denials to thee of what thou wouldest; he shall gain that, though thou loosest thy peace and quietness, that good which thy foolish sinful will desires at his hand, *Joh. 12. 27, 28.* and if so blessed be his Name, let God live, but let man dye and perish, that he may be exalted of vile man.

6. Remember the sweet rest thou shalt have by this subjection to the Lord; nothing is mans cross but mans will; a stubborn will, like a stubborn heifer in the yoke, galls and frets the soul, *Learn meekness,* without favour, *of me, in taking my yoke upon you,* and then you shall find rest. Hell would not be hell to a heart truly humbled. Sometimes you find enlargements, then you are glad; sometimes none, then you sink; sometimes you have hope of mercy, then

then you are calm; sometimes you lose your hopes, then the Sea works; when the Lord pleaseth you, then you are well; but if a little cross befall you, then your spring is muddy, and a little thing troubles: Oh be humble and vile in thine own eyes, and verily such uncertain fits of peace and trouble are done, and the days of all your mourning are now ended.

Of thankfulness, to all those whome the Lord hath truly humbled: Time was when the Lord first convinced you, that so long as you could make any shift, find rest in any duties, you would never lie down at Christs feet, now the Lord might have left you to have stumbled at that stumbling-stone, and to have stuck in those bushes, but you may see that the Lord will save you, even then when you would not be saved by him: and especially take notice of two passages of Gods dealings with you, wherein usually you find matter of discouragement, rather than of acknowledgment of Gods goodness to you therein.

1. That the Lord hath withdrawn all feeling of any good, which it may be once you felt, and that the Lord hath let out more of the evil of your hearts then ever you imagined was in them, nay, so much evil that you think there is none like unto you, who hath now no heart nor power to stir, think, desire, will, or do any thing that is good: O bless the Lord for this, for this is Gods

way to humble, and empty, and make thee poore; the Lord saw (though it may be you did not) that you rested in that good you felt, and was or would be lifted up by these, and therefore the Lord hath broke those crazie crutches, famishd now, brought you down to nothing, made you like dry deserts; all the hurt the Lord aimeth at in this, being only to humble you, and though these desertions be bitter for the present, yet that by these he might do you good in your latter end: Oh brethren, the Apostles stands at a stay, and desires the Corinthians to consider, *You see your calling*, saith he, *1 Cor. 1. Not many mighty, nor many wise, but things that are not doth he call, that no flesh might glory: The Lord*, saith Moses, *Deut. 8. 2, 3. Suffered thee to wander* (that was the first) *and then fed thee; that he might prove thee and humble thee; remember this*, saith he: So say I to you, remember this mercy, that when the Lord makes you worst of all (not real, but) in your own eyes, that then the Lord is about this glorious work.

2. That the Lord hath kept you (it may be a long time too) from sight and sense of his peculiar love; one would wonder why the Lord should hide his love so much, so long, from those to whom he doth intend it; the great reason is, because there is in many one a heart desirous of his love, and this would quiet them, if they were sure of it.

but

Deut. 6.  
19.

but they never came to be quieted with Gods will, in case they think they shall never partake of his love; but are above that, oppose, and resist, and quarrel with that, unhumbled under that; the Lord therefore intending to bestow his favour only upon a humbled sinner, he will therefore hide his face until they lye low, and acknowledge themselves worthy of nothing but extremity of misery, unworthy of the least mercy: The people of God, *Lam. 1. 16.* cry out, *that the Comforter which should refresh their souls was far from them:* What was Gods end in this? you shall see the end of it, *verse 18. The Lord is righteous* (here the Church is humbled) *for I have rebelled;* or (as *Zanckius* reads it) *I have made his mouth bitter;* that the Lord speaks no peace to me, but bitter things. The cause is in my own self, and therefore if he never comfort me, nor speak good word unto me, yet he is righteous, but I am vile; and you will find this certain, that as the Lord therefore humbles that he may exalt, so the Lord never refuseth to exalt (in hiding his face) but it is to humble. And is this the worst the Lord aims at, and will you not be thankful? why are you then discouraged when you find it thus with you? do not say the Lord never dealt thus with any as with me; suppose that; the reason then is, because the Lord sees never had any such a high heart as thou hast; but Oh be thankful, that notwithstanding

standing this he will take the pains to take it down.

Thus much for Humiliation; I come now to the fourth and last, which is Faith.

### SECT. V.

*The fourth and last act of Christs power, is the work of Faith.*

**T**He Lord having wounded and humbled his Elect, and laid them down dead at his feet, they are now as unable to believe as they were to humble their own souls; and therefore now the Lord takes them up into his own arms, that they lean and rest on the bosome of their beloved by faith. After Joseph had spoken roughly to his brethren, and thereby brought the blood of their Brother to remembrance, and so had humbled them; and then he can contain no longer, but discovers himself to them and tells them, I am Joseph whom you wickedly sold, yet fear not; so doth our Saviour carry it towards his Elect, when he laid them low: Now is the very season for him to advance the glory of his grace; he cannot now contain himself any longer, but having torn and taken away that vail of sin and of the law from off their hearts, now they see the Lord with open face, even the end of that which was to be abolished, &



Cor. 3. The explication of this great work is of exceeding great difficulty; nothing more stirring then faith in a true Christian, because he lives by it, yet it is very little known; as children in the wombe, that know not that navel-string by which they principally live: I shall therefore be wary, and leaving larger explications, acquaint you with the nature of Faith, in this brief description of it.

*Faith is that gracions work of the spirit, whereby an humbled sinner receiveth Christ, or whether the whole soul cometh out of it self to Christ, for Christ and all his benefits, upon the call of Christ in his Word.*

Before I open this particularity, give me leave to premise some general considerations; Faith is the Complement of effectuation, which begins in Gods call, and ends in this answer to that call; the Lord prevents a poor humbled soul with his call, either not knowing how, or not able, or not daring to come; and then the soul comes, and hence men called, and be'ieving are all one, Rom. 9. 24. 33. Many a wounded sinner will be scrambling after Christ from some general reports of him, before the day and hour of Gods glorious and gracions call. Now for any to receive Christ, or come to Christ before he is called, is presumption; to refuse Christ when called, is rebellion; to come and receive when called,

is properly and formally Faith, and that which the Scripture stiles the obedience of Faith, *Rom. 1. 5.* And now Christ at this instant is fully and freely given on Gods part, when really and freely come unto and taken on our part.

This *receiving of Christ*, or *coming to Christ*, are for substance the same, though the words be diverse; the holy Ghost useth to express one and the same thing in variety of words, that our feebleness might the better understand what he meaneth. And hence in Scripture, *believing, coming, receiving Christ, rolling, trusting, cleaving to the Lord, &c.* set out one and the same thing; and therefore it is no wonder if our Divines have different descriptions of faith in variety of words; which if well considered do but set out one and the same thing: And I do conceive they do all agree in this description I have now mentioned; I know there are some who tread awry here, whom I shall briefly note out, and so pass on to what we intend.

1. The Papists, with some others of corrupt judgements, at least of weak apprehensions among our selves, describe faith to be nothing else but a supernatural assent to divine truth, because of a divine testimony. *Ex. gr.* to assent to this truth, that Christ is come, that he is the Son of God; that he was dead and is risen again, that he is the Saviour of the world, &c. and to con-

firm this, they produce, *Mat. 16. 16.* 1 *Joh. 4. 3.*

It is granted that this assent is in Faith, for Faith alway hath respect to some testimony; for man by his fall hath lost all knowledge of divine and supernatural truths; hence God reveals them in his word; hence Faith sees them, and assents to them, because God hath spoken them: to see and know things by vision, is to see things in themselves intuitively and immediately; but to see things by Faith, is to see them by and in a testimony given of them, *Joh. 10. 30.* *Blessed is he that hath not seen (i. e. Christ immediately) but believed; i. e. his testimony, and on him in it;* this assent therefore is in Faith (for we must believe Christ before we can believe in him) but this comprehends not the whole nature of Faith; I mean of that Faith we are now speaking of, *viz.* as it unites to Christ, and possesseth us with Christ. For,

1. This description placeth faith only in the understanding, whereas 'tis also in the will, as the words *trusting, relying, &c.* intimate,

2. This assent is merely general, without particular application, which is ever in true Faith, *Gal. 2. 20.*

3. This is such a faith as the devils may have, *Jam. 2. 19.* and reprobate men may have, *2 Pet. 2. 20, 21.* *Heb. 10. 26.* There is a wilful refusing of the known truth.

4. It

4. It is the Papists aim to vilifie faith hereby, by describing it by that which is one ingredient in it, but excluding that which is principall; those phrases therefore of *believing Christ is come in the flesh*, 1 John 4. 2. and *that he is the Sonne of God*, Mat. 16. 16. as if this were the only object to faith, are not to be understood exclusively, excluding other acts of faith, which the Scripture in other places sets down clearly, but inclusively, as supposing them to be contained herein: for as we in our times describing faith by relying upon Christ for salvation, do not exclude hereby our believing that he is the Messiah; but we include it, or suppose it, because that is not now questioned, the truth of the Gospel being to abundantly cleared: so in those times, they described Faith by one principal act, to believe that he was the Son of God, and come into the flesh, because this was the main and principal thing in question then: and if the Lord had not set our faith by other acts in Scripture, we should not vary from our compass in such expressions in the Word in these days: for their faith then, is exemplary to us now, because the Word doth more fully set it out in more special acts, hence we set it out also by them; for 'tis evident, as the Jews did believe in a Messiah to come, so they did also believe and look for all good from him, Job. 4. 25. *He will reach us all things when he comes*: and therefore their faith

not confine it self to that historical act that a Messiah should come, or that this was the Messiah, but they did expect and look for all good from him: and hence the Apostle expounding this saying, viz. believing that Christ is dead and risen again, we shall hereby be saved; *If thou believest saith he, with thine heart this truth, thou shalt be saved.* Now to believe with the heart, as it doth not exclude assent, so it necessarily includes the acts of the will and affections, in relying upon him, and trusting to him. And hence when Peter had made that confession, *Act. 16. 16.* Christ tells him, *Thou art Peter, i. e.* a stone resting upon the rock (as some good Interpreters expound it) and therefore Peters faith did not exclude these principal acts of resting on Christ, cleaving to Christ, but did include and suppose them:

1. Some run into another extream, and make faith nothing else but a persuasion or assurance that Christ died for me in particular, or that he is mine. That which moves some thus to think, is the Universal Redemption by the death of Christ; they know no ground or bottom for faith, but this Proposition, Christ died for thee, and hence makes Redemption Universal: And hence the Arminians boast so much of their *Quod unusquisque tenetur credere, &c.* But,

1. This is a false bottom, for Christ hath not died for all, because he hath not prayed for all, *Joh. 17. 2.*

Rom. 10:

9, 10.

2. This

This is a sandy bottom and foundation, which when a Christian rests upon, it shakes under him, when the soul shall think, though Christ hath died for me, yet no more for me than for Judas, or thousands of reprobates now in hell. Indeed after faith a Christian is bound to believe it, as Paul did, Gal. 2. 20. 1 Cor. 13. 1, 2.

I conceive therefore those holy men of ours who have described Faith by assurance, have not so much aimed at a description of what faith is in it self, as it possesseth in with Christ; but of what degree and extent it may be, and should be in us, they describe it therefore by the most eminent act of it, in full assurance; and therefore consult with the Authors of this description, and enquire of them, Is there no doubting with Faith? Yes, say they, mans doubtings sometime are even unto a kind of despair, but then (say they) it should not be thus. The Papists commend doubtings, and deny assurance, place faith in a general assent; our Champions that were to wettle with them, maintained it to be a particular application (and not only a general assent) and that with a full assurance of perswasion, which being the most eminent act of faith, excludes not other inferior acts of it, which as they are before it, so may possess the Soul with Christ without it: Although withal, it is certain, that there is no true faith, but it hath some assurance: Of which afterward.

Let me now come to the explication of the description given, where note these five things.

1. The efficient cause of Faith, it is a work of the Spirit.
2. The Subject or Matter in which it is seated, viz. the soul of an humbled sinner.
3. The form of it, viz. the coming of the whole soul to Christ.
4. The end of it, viz. for Christ and all his benefits.
5. The special ground and means of it, viz. the call of Christ in his Word.

1. *The efficient cause of Faith.*

Faith is a gracious work of the Spirit of Christ, the Spirit therefore is the efficient cause or principal workman of Faith: the Spirit doth not believe, but causeth us to believe; 'tis not *principium quod*, the principle which doth believe, but *principium quod*, the principle by which we do believe; the souls of all the Elect, especially when humbled, are, of all other things, most unable to believe: Nay look as before conjunction and humiliation, Satan held the soul captive chiefly by its lusts and sins; so now when the Lord hath burnt those cords, and broken those chains, all the powers of darkness strengthen themselves, and keep the soul under mightily by unbelief. What do you tell me of mercy? (saith the soul) 'tis mercy.

mercy which I have continually resisted, desperately despised; why do you perswade me to believe? Alas! I cannot; 'tis true, all that which you say is true, if I could believe, but I cannot see Christ, I cannot come at Christ, I seek him in the means, but he forsakes me there, and I am left of God desolate; and here beloved the soul had not formerly so many excuses for his sin, as now it hath clouds of objections against believing; the Spirit therefore takes fast hold of the souls of all the Elect, draws them unto Christ; and therefore it is called *the Spirit of Faith*, 2 Cor. 4. 13. and that by an omnipotent and irresistible power, Isa. 53. 1. *Who hath believed?* and to whom is the arm of the Lord revealed? that the soul must and shall believe now. *Compel them to come* saith the Lord of the Supper, Luke 14. 23. This the Arminians will not believe; for (say they) the Question is not, Whether we are enabled to believe by grace? But Whether it be after this manner and by this means, viz. *modo irresistibili*? Consider therefore these Reasons, to clear the point.

1. Whence doth our call and coming to Christ arise, but from Gods immovable and unchangeable purpose? The Lord therefore must never alter his purpose, or prevail with the soul to believe, and overpower the heart thereto.

2. Is not Christ Jesus bound by office



promise to the Father to bring in all his lost scattered sheep, that so the Father and he may be glorified in them? *Joh. 10. 16. Other sheep I have, those I must bring home, and they shall hear my voice.* You that complain you cannot believe, say, that you have no heart to believe, the Lord must fetch you in; and you shall hear the Bridegrooms voice with joy.

3. Is not the act of believing wrought by a creating power, *Eph. 1. 9. Eph. 2. 10. 1st. 57. 18, 19. I create the fruit of the lips, peace, peace to him that is near, and afar off:* and is not a creating voice irresistible, though there be nothing for it to work upon? so though you have no ability, heart, head or strength to believe, yet the Lord will create the fruit of the lips of Gods Messengers Peace, Peace: *Isa. 55. 1. or on good*

4. Doth not the Lord let in that infinite and surpassing sweetness of grace, when he works the soul to believe, standing in extrem need of that grace, that it cannot but come and cleave to it? *Psal 63. 2, 3. I long to see thee, saith David, for thy loving kindness is better then life;* is it impossible for a man to cleave to his life? much more so that which is better then life: the light is so clear, it cannot but see and wonder at grace; the good is so sweet, it cannot but taste and accept what God so freely offers; and therefore the poor Canaanish woman, *Mat. 15. 21* could not be driven away, though

Christ bid her in a manner be gone; but she made all the objections against her arguments for her (as usually faith doth, when under this stroke of the Spirit) *The violent take the Kingdom of Heaven by force*; the Spirit puts a necessity upon them, and irresistibly over-powers them, and this is the cause of it.

And is not this matter of great consolation to all those who feel themselves utterly unable to believe? you think the Lord would give peace and pardon, life and mercy, if I could believe; Oh consider the Lord hath undertaken in the Covenant of Grace to work in all his the condition of the Covenant, as well as to convey the good of it, *Jer. 31. 31, 32, 33, 34.* He hath done this for others by an irresistible power, *Heb. 12. 1, 2.* Look up to Jesus the author and finisher of your faith, he came out of his Fathers bosome, not only to give life by his death, but to enable his to eat and close with him by Faith, that they might never dye, *Joh. 6. 50.* so the Lord may work it in thee; it is true also, he may not; yet it is unspeakable comfort to consider, that if the Lord had put it over unto thee to believe, it is certain thou shouldst never have believed, but now the work is put into the hand of Christ; that which is impossible to thee, is possible, may easie with him; he can comprehend thee, when thou canst not apprehend him: this is exceeding sweet when thy body

is sick, and soul is deserted, incredible things to be believed, are propounded, an impossible work to thy weakness urged, upon pain of Gods forest and most unspeakable wrath; to consider it is not in me, but in the Lords own hand, and it is his office, his glory to work faith, and as the Apostle speaks, to shew mercy unto them that are shut up, not only under sin, but also unbelief, Rom. 11. 32. But why hath the Lord made thee feel thy inability to believe? truly the end of our wants is not to make us sin and shift for our selves, but to ask and seek for supply, and the end of the continuance of those wants is, that we should continue to ask and seek. And dost thou think thou shalt seek to the Lord by his own hand to create faith, and fetch thee in, and will not the Lord take his time to work it? *He that believes*, saith the Apostle, Rom. 10. 11. *shall not be ashamed*; why so? *because the Lord*, saith he, *who is over all, is rich unto all that call upon him*, ver. 12. If thou hast not a heart shut up from asking of it, the Lord who hath power, hath not a heart shut up toward thee from working it.

But withal be thankful exceedingly, all you whose hearts the Lord hath drawn and overcome; he came to his own people the Jews, and would oft have gathered them, but they would not; and therefore he forsook them, and left their habitations desolate; Oh how oft would the Lord

have gathered you, and you would not; yet the Lord hath not forsaken you, but called you in whether you would or no; the Lord hath taken many a man at his first word, and left him at the first repulse, shaken off the dust of his feet against him presently, *Mat. 10. 14.* without any more intreaties to accept of mercy; yet thou hast not only refused, but even crucified the Son of God; yet he hath not been driven from thee, but his bowels have been oft kindled together, when he hath been ready to give thee up; when thou hast been under the hedges, and in the highways that lead to death, and didst never think of him, nor didst desire him, yet he hath compelled thee to come in; he hath made thee feel such an extreme need of him, and made himself so exceeding sweet, that thou hast not been able to resist his love, but to cry out, Lord, thou hast overcome me with mercy, I am not able to resist any more; which is more wonderful, when thou hast been gathered and gone from him, and lost thyself and him also again, and it may be hast been offended at him, yet he hath gone before thee into *Galilee*, and gathered thee up when thou hast been as water spilt upon the ground; what should be the cause of this, but only this? the work of faith lies upon him both to begin and finish; he must gather in all his lost sheep, and therefore he hath put forth an irresistible power of his Spirit, upon thy heart which must carry thee captive after him.

I am afraid my faith hath been rather presumption, a work of my own power, then faith wrought by the Spirits power; how may I discern that? Object.

If you are wrapt up in Gods Covenant, if any promise be actually yours, it is no presumption to take possession by faith of what is your own; dost thou seriously will Christ, and resolve never to give the Lord rest, until he give thee rest in him? then see, *Rev. 22. 17. Whosoever will, let him take of the water of life.* Answ.

Dost thou thirst after Christ? then read, *Isa. 55. 1, 2, 3. Joh. 7. 37. If any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink.* When Christ saw their faith, *Mat. 9. 1, 2.* What said he? *Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven;* the word signifies, *be confident.* It is no presumption to believe pardon of sins, now thou art come unto me, not only for the healing of thy body, but especially for pardon of sin. It is the great sin of many Saints, when they do thirst, and believe, and come to Christ, and so are under the promise of grace; yet they think it presumption now to believe and take possession of all those Treasures that be in Christ, but look that the Lord should first make them feel, and then they will believe; whereas faith should now receive and drink in abundantly of the fulness of Christ; Shall it be accounted presumption for any man to eat his own bread, and drink his own drink, and put

put on his cloathes? the promise makes Christ and all his benefits your own, therefore it is no presumption to apply them.

2. Suppose you cannot find your self within any promise, and you see no reason to believe, only you have the Lords call and command to believe; do you now in conscience and obedience to this command, or to Gods invitation and intreaty in the Gospel, believe, because thou darest not dishonour God by refusing his grace? thou dost therefore accept of it, this is no presumption; unless obedience be presumption; nay, the most acceptable obedience, which is the obedience of Faith, *John 6. 38.* For what was the ground on which those three thousand believed? *Acts 2. 38. 39.* *See.* Peter said, Repent, that you may receive remission of sins: Now what follows? They that gladly received the word were baptized: Oh that word, repent, i. e. as *Beza* expounds it, return to God and come in, was a most sweet word to them, and therefore they received it; this was no presumption, either for Peter to exhort them to repent, or for them to take the Lord (as that godly man said) at his first word. I know there is a subjection to the Gospel, arising only from slavish fear and carnall hopes, *Psal. 66. 3. Psal. 18. 44.* this may be in presumptuous Reprobates, but there is a subjection arising from the sense of the sweetness, and exceeding goodness of Gods call and promise.

*Psal.*

*Psal, 110. 2, 3.* As a woman that is overcome with the word of her loving suitor, the man is precious, and hence his words are very sweet, and overcome her heart to think, why should such a one as I be lookt upon, by one of such a place? It is no presumption now, but duty to give her consent: so it is here; when the Lord is precious, and his words [Oh accept me, Oh come to me!] are exceeding sweet; and hereupon our obedience gladly yields up it self to the Lord, takes possession of the Lord, this is no more presumption, then to sanctify a Sabbath, or to pray, or hear the Word, because the Lords commands are herein very sweet.

3.

If Repentance accompanies Faith, tis no presumption to believe.

Many know the sin, and hence believe in Christ, trust to Christ, and there is an end of their faith; but what confession and sorrow for sin, what more love to Christ follows this faith? truly none; nay their faith is the cause why they have none; for they think, if I trust to Christ to forgive them, he will do it, and there is an end of the business. Verily, this hedge faith, this bramble faith, that catches hold on Christ, and pricks and scratches Christ by more impenitency, more contempt of him, is meer presumption, which shall one day be burnt up, and destroyed by the fire of Gods jealousy. Fie upon that faith that serves only to keep man from being tormented before his time. Your  
fins

sins would be your sorrows, but that your  
 faith quiets you. But if faith be accompa-  
 nied with repentance, mourning for sin,  
 more esteem of Gods grace in Christ, so that  
 nothing breaks thy heart more then the  
 thoughts of Christs unchangeable love to one  
 so vile, and this love makes thee love much  
 and love him the more; as thy sin encreas-  
 eth, so thou desirest that thy love may in-  
 crease; and now the stream of thy thoughts  
 run, how thou maist live to him that died for  
 thee. This was *Maries* faith, who sate at  
 Christs feet weeping, washing them with her  
 tears, and *loving him much, because much*  
*was forgiven*; who though she was account-  
 ed a presumptuous woman by Simon, and  
 Christ himself suffered in his thoughts, for  
 suffering of her to come so near unto him;  
 yet the Lord himself clears her therein, and  
 justifies her before God and men: Many  
 poor believer thinks, If I should believe, I  
 should but presume, and spin a spiders web  
 of faith out of my own bowels: and hence  
 you shall observe, this not believing stops up  
 the work of repentance, mourning and love,  
 and all chearful obedience in them; and on  
 the contrary, if they did believe, it would  
 be with them as themselves think many  
 times, If I knew the Lord was mine, and  
 my sins pardoned, Oh how should I then  
 bless him, and love him, and wonder at him,  
 how would this break my heart before him.  
 &c.



Now I say, let all the world judge, if that which thou thinkest would be presumption, be not rebellion, because it makes thee worse, and stops up the Spirit of grace in thee. Whereas that Faith which lets out those blessed springs of sorrow, love, thankfulness, humbleness, what can it be else but such a saving Faith as is wrought by the Spirit, because it lets in the Spirit more abundantly into a dry and desolate heart?

Rom. 10:  
9, 10.

### 2. The Subject or Matter of Faith.

This is the second thing in the description of Faith, the soul of an humbled sinner is the subject or matter of Faith. I do not mean the matter out of which Faith is wrought (for there is nothing in man out of which the Spirit begets it) but that wherein Faith is seated. I mean also the habit of Faith, not the principle of it; for that is out of man in the Lord Jesus, who is therefore called *our hope*, as well as *our strength*; the soul therefore is the subject of Faith, called the heart, Rom. 10. 5. compared with Mat. 6. 21. for we cannot go or come to Christ in this life with our bodies, we are *here absent from the Lord*, 1 Cor. 5. but the soul can go to him, the heart can be with him, as the eye may see a thousand miles off, and receive the species or image of the things it sees into it, so the soul enlightened by faith, can see Christ afar off, it can long for, choose, and rest upon the Lord of life, and receive the lively Image of

of Christs glory in it, 2 Cor. 3. ult.

If Christ were present upon earth, the soul (not the body) only could truly receive him. Christ comes to his Elect only by his Spirit, and hence our spirits only are fit to receive him and close with him; thousands bear Christ outwardly, that inwardly are deaf to all Gods calls, their spirits taste not, see not, feel not; it is therefore the soul that is the subject of Faith: and I say it is a *bumble empty* soul which is the subject; for a full, proud, broken Spirit cannot, nay, will not receive Christ, as we have proved; and therefore *Luke 14.* the servant is commanded to bid the *poor, halt, blind, and lame, to come in*; they would not make excuses as others did; they that were stung to death with *fiery Serpents*, were the only men that the *brazen Serpent* was lifted up for them to look upon, and to be healed, *John 3. 14.* and therefore the Promise does not run, *If any man have Wisdom, let him ask it*, but, *If any man want wisdom, James 1. 5.* So if any man want light, life, want peace, pardon, want Christ, and his Spirit, let them ask and the Lord will give, away with your money if you come to these waters to buy, and take freely. *If any man would be wise, let him be a fool* (saith the blessed Apostle) an empty nothing, a soul in a perishing, helpless, hopeless condition, is the subject of faith; such only feel their need of Christ, are glad at the

offer of Christ, and therefore such only can and will receive Christ, and come unto Christ, by faith: and truly if we had but hearts, the consideration of this might be ground of great comfort and confidence unto all Gods people whose souls come unto Jesus Christ; for that which was in *Thomas*, *John 21.* is in all men naturally: if we could see Christ with our eyes, and feel him with our hands, and embrace him (as *Mary* did) with our arms, if we could hear himself speak, we could then *believe*, as they said, *if he will come from the Cross*, so we say, *if he will come down from heaven thus unto us*, we will then believe; if we want that we fear we may be at last deceived, because we want sense, and cannot come to close with our eyes and hands, the objects of our faith; but Oh consider this point, we are made partakers of Christs life, and salvation by him only, yet certainly by faith. Now this faith is not by seeing him with our eyes, coming near to him with our bodies, but coming to him with our souls; the soul is the seat of faith. Now this you may do, though you never thus saw him, *when though you see not, yet believing you rejoice*: This coming of the soul to Christ, doth make a firmer union between thee and Christ, then if thou wert bodily present with him in Heaven; For many touched and crouded him, that never wert truly united to him, or received virtue from  
in

*Acts 10.*  
43.

*1 Pet. 1.*  
8.

John 6.  
64. 65.

in him. If our souls were in the third Heaven with Christ, who of us would then doubt of our portion with him? I tell you, if our souls go out of sin and self, unto Christ Jesus, and there rest, this makes you nearer to him, then if your souls were under his wing in the highest Heavens. The poor Sea-man when he is near dangerous shoars, when he cannot go down to the depth of the Sea to fasten his Ship, yet if he can cast his Anchor twenty or forty fathoms deep, and if that holds, this secures him in the worst storms: When we are tossed, and cannot come to Christ without bodily presence, yet if our souls, can come, if our faith our anchor can reach him, let us knit us to him, this should exceedingly comfort our hearts.

Heb. 4.  
18. 16.  
20.

Object.

Answer.

How and where should my soul come to Christ, who is now absent from me?

Christ comes to you in his Word and Covenant of Grace, there is his Spirit, his truth, goodness, love, faithfulness; receive this, you receive him; embrace this, you embrace him; as among our selves, you see great estates are conveyed and surrendered by Bond and Writings, *John 14. 23.* When they received the word, they received Christ. *John 14. 23.* If my words abide in you, and if I abide in you by my words, you shall be fruitful.

1. 1. 1. T  
2.

By the Word let thine eye pitch upon the person; do not only account the Pre-

mise true, but with *Sarah*, account him faithful who hath promised; and then let thy heart roll it self upon that grace and faithfulness revealed in this word, lean upon the breast of this beloved: and thus the Soul by the Chariot wheels and Wings of the Word, is Professour of Christ in it, and carried up to Christs Cross, as dying, *Gal.* 3. 1. and from thence to his glory in his Kingdom by it, *Heb.* 10. 11, 12. As a man that gives a great estate by some writing to us, we believe it as if he were present; and by this we do not onely believe the writing to be true, but the man to be faithful and loving to us; and hereupon our hearts are carried after the man himself, though afar off from us. Thus we ascend to Christ in the Cloud of Faith; as *Jacob*, though he could hardly believe, yet as soon as he was perswaded *Joseph* was yet alive, his Spirit presently revived, and it was immediately with him, before his body came to him: So with Faith, the Soul goes unto Christ, before our bodies and Souls both together shall have immediate Communion with him.

*Heb.* 11.

11.

### 3. The Form of Faith.

This is the third thing in the description of Faith; the coming of the whole Soul out of it self unto Christ is the form of Faith, and that wherein the life and essence of it consists, and which doth difference it from all other graces of the Spirit. The first act

of

Isa. 55.

1, 2.

Mat.

11. 28.

of faith, as it unites us to Christ, is not assurance that he is mine, but a coming to him with assurance, and hereby he is become mine. *Come unto the waters, and so buy wine and milk, i. e.* now make them your own. The weary and heavy laden shall not have rest, unless they come to Christ for it. Faith doth nothing for life; for that is the Law of works, it only receives him who hath done all for it, it comes out of all it hath or doth (like *Abraham* that left his servants behind him, when he went up to God in the Mount) unto Christ for life. Conceive it thus, *Adam* had a principle, and stock of life in himself, in his own hand, and therefore was to live by this, to live of himself and from himself, and therefore had no need nor use of faith; he lived by the Law of works, which the Apostle sets in a direct opposition to the Law of Faith; but *Adam* being now fallen, hath lost his life, and became not like the man that fell among thieves between *Jerusalem* and *Jericho*, stript, wounded, and half dead, but *wholly dead*, *Eph. 2. 1.* So that let any man seek life for himself, its impossible he should live; for if there had been a Law that could have given life, our righteousness should have been thereby, *Gal. 3. 21.* Hence it follows, If any man will have life he must go out of himself to another, *viz.* the Lord of life for it, *Joh. 5. 40. Joh. 6. 27, 28, 29.*

Now observe it, this very coming, this

very

very motion of the soul to Christ (a grace which *Adam* neither had, nor had power to use) is Faith; the spirit of Christ moving or drawing the soul, the soul is thence moved, and comes to Christ, *Jo. 6. 64, 65*. The soul by sin is averted from God, and turns his back upon God; the turning or coming of the soul (not unto duties of holiness, for that is obedience properly, but) unto God in Christ again, is properly and formally Faith. All evil is in mans self, and from himself; all mans good is in Christ, and from Christ. The souls of all Gods Elect, seeing these things, forsake and renounce themselves, in whom and from whom is all their evil, and come unto Christ, in whom and from whom is all their good. This motion of the soul between these extremes, through that vast and infinite distance that is between a sinful wretched man, and a blessed Saviour, is faith; for by faith principally we pass from death to life, *Joh. 5. 24*. The soul of a poor sinner wounded and humbled, sometimes knows not Christ, and sometimes cries out as those, *Acts 2. 37. What shall I do?* Whither shall I go? sometimes sees not, sometimes cannot, it hath no heart to stir or come, it therefore looks up, and longs, and goes unto the Lord to draw it, like poor Ephraim, *Jer. 31. 18. Oh turn me Lord, and then I shall be turned*, and that is lowest and least degree of faith. But some other time the soul mourning

for want of the Lord, the Lord comes unto it with great clearness, glory, and sweetness of grace and peace; and hence the soul cannot but come and close with him, and cry *Raboni*, and say, Oh Lord, it is thy good pleasure to have respect to such a clod of earth, to tender such riches of grace to one so unworthy, and to bid, nay to beseech me to come and take? Lord behold I come. This is Faith. Would you have a proof of it? Consider therefore these particulars.

1. Consider these Scriptures, *John 6. 35. I am the bread of life, he that cometh to me shall never hunger, and he that believeth in mee shall never thirst; Where you are coming to Christ, and believing in Christ, are all one. So John 7. 37. In the last day of the Feast the Lord Christ cries out with much vehemency, If any man thirst let him come to me and drink. Now in the next verse our Saviour expounds this coming; for he saith, He that believeth on me, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.*

So to come to Christ, as upon this to draw in of Christs fullness, is believing in Christ. So *Heb. 11. 6.* the Apostle saith, *Without faith it is impossible to please God; and therefore in rendering the Reason of this, explaineth what he meant by faith, viz. to be our coming unto God, upon a double testimony, first believing first that he is; secondly, that he is the rewarder of them that seek him diligently, (which is all one) who do come unto him.*



So *Jo. 1. 12.* So many as received him (which is all one with coming) he adopted them as sons, even to them that believe in his name. And hence we shall observe, that the Scripture doth not attribute our righteousness and life to our believing of Christ, but to our believing on Christ, in Christ (a phrase peculiar to heavenly language, and therefore not found in any humane Writer) because it is not the bare believing of a testimonie that saveth us, unless we so believe it, as to believe in Christ, which cannot be but by coming to him, and as it were in him, or into him, or union with Christ being made compleat hereby.

2. That upon which the Lord promiseth life, and salvation, and mercy, cannot be works but faith, *Gal. 3. 21. Heb. 11. 6.* but throughout all the Old and New Testament, the Lord promiseth life and salvation, to sinners, or to them that return, *Jer. 3. 12. Exod. 33. 10. Joel. 2. 12, 13. Heb. 7. 25. Joh. 5. 40.*

3. If unbelief be nothing else but a departing from God, faith can be nothing else but a coming unto God: but that is the nature of unbelieve, *Heb. 3. 12. Heb. 10. 38. John 6. 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69. John 12. 37, 38, 39, 40.*

The Lords great plot is to gather all his elect under the wings of Christ, *Mat. 23. 37. Eph. 1. 9. 10.* and therefore calls them to come under them by the voice of the Go-

spel. The coming under them therefore can be nothing else but faith, the proper obedience to the Gospel, as works are under the voice of the Law. Thus faith is the coming of the soul to Christ. But you will say, Did not many come to Christ, that were never saved by him? Yes, many came to him with their bodily presence, that were excluded from him, Jo. 6. 36.

But you will say, Do not many mens souls come, are not many mens hearts moving towards Christ, and yet excluded from Christ? Do not many cry Lord, Lord? and not many enlightned, and taste of this heavenly gift, and yet fall away? I confess it is very true; and therefore it is set down in this description of faith, that it is the coming of the whole soul unto Christ. Never do any yet come to Christ and receive him with their whole souls, with all their hearts, but they had fruition of him, and blessedness by him; Faith therefore is not the coming of the soul, but the coming of the whole soul unto Jesus Christ: and this you may be established in upon these grounds.

1. The Scripture expressly calls for the Prov. 3. 5. *Trust in the Lord with all heart*, Acts 8. 37. *If thou believest with all heart thou shalt be saved*, Joel 2. 13. *Turn unto the Lord with all your hearts*, Jer. 3. 13. *You shall find the Lord when you seek him with your whole hearts*. As we have a great gift to bestow, and

ask a poor man to whom we intend to give whether he will accept it or no? Yes, saith he wihal my heart; so it is here, the Lord asks those he intends to bestow his Son upon, and saith to them, you have lived thus long without him, and thus long abused him, will you now have him, and accept of him? Yes Lord, with all my heart; this is all the Lord requires. Doth the Lord require no more of me, but to come? Lord this voice is most sweet, I come with all my heart, I come.

2. Because Christ is worthy of the whole heart, all must be sold away to buy this *field*, this *treasure*, Mat 13. 44. *He that loveth father or mother more then me is not worthy of me.* A filthy lust, a base harlot hath had thy whole heart, and dost thou think that the Lord Christ will have it divided? Is not one heart too little for him? are not ten thousand souls too few to embrace him, or cleave to him? 3. Because without this your coming to him is but fained, Jer. 3. 10. *They return to me not with their whole heart, but fainedly:* To cleave to Christ, and a lust, to Christ, and a proud heart, cannot be un-fained faith, to go to your lusts in time of peace, and fly to Christ in times of extremity, is damnable hypocrisie. When conscience troubles you, you then go to Christ to ease you, and when your unruly wills and lusts trouble you, you go to the world to ease you, and thus your hearts are divided,

and you come not wholly and only unto Christ for rest. Believe it, it is such a faith by which you may, as *Samuel* did on *Saul's* garment, take hold of him, but the Lord will never take hold of you. Set a branch in the stock, if it stays loosely in it, it will wither in time; and this is the great cause of withering Christians, and of so many Apostates in these evil times. Those that came to Christ, *John 6.* and followed him for a time, but afterward fell away, *ver. 66.* what was the reason of their fall? *viz.* when they were offended at Christ, they knew whither to go from Christ; but what saith *Peter*? *Lord, whither should we go?* *ver. 68.*

If you lay the pipes that are to convey water from a full Fountain, but one foot, or one inch short of it, there cannot be any water derived from thence. Oh beloved, what is the reason that many a mans faith doth him no good, derives no life, spirit, efficacie, peace, power from the Lord Jesus? is it because Christ is a dry Christ, and unwilling to communicate? No, no, the wound is in their faith, that pipe is laid but half way to him, they fall one foot short of him, their souls come, but their *whole* souls do not come to him, and hence they never reach Christ; they lye not in Christ, and therefore receive not from Christ, Christ is precious (here their souls come) but not exceeding precious, *preciousness* it self, as the

word is, 1 Pet. 2. 7. (here the whole soul doth not come) they cleave to Christ and rest upon Christ (here their souls come) but they cleave not to Christ only (thus their whole souls do not come.)

Psal. 62

5.

4. If the whole soul by unbelief departs from God, then the whole soul must return and come again unto God.

5. If the want of this be the great cause why men are rejected of God, then the whole soul must return to him: but this is the cause why all men under the means are rejected of God. *Israel would none of me*, i. e. would not be content alone with me, would not take quiet contentment in me (as the Hebrew word signifies) the Lord was not good enough for them; but their hearts went out from him to other things, and therefore *the Lord left them up to their own hearts lust, and they walked in their own counsels*. The woman that forsakes the guide of her youth and sets her heart as much upon other men as her husband, is an adulteress, for which only she shall have a bill of divorce.

Psa. 81.

12, 13.

6. Because as the Gospel first reveals Christ to the mind, and then offers him to the will, so faith, which runs parallel with the Gospel, first sees Christ (there the mind, one part of the soul, goes out) then receives Christ gladly (there the other part, the will, goes out) and so the whole soul comes to Christ. The Gospel comes to all the Elect, first in great clearness and evidence

of the truth of it, 1 *Thef.* 1, 5. to which the understanding assents, and is perswaded of. Secondly, In great grace and goodness, surpassing beauty and sweetness, *Lam.* 3. 24. with which the will is drawn, and so the whole soul comes unto Christ; for the Gospel is not only true, but glad tidings to all the Elect, especially when humbled at Gods feet, 1 *Tim.* 1. 15. in whom, saith the Apostle, *Eph.* 1. 12, 13. you believed, after that ye heard the word of truth (there is the object of the understanding) the Gospel of your salvation (there is the goodness of it, the object of the will) so that the whole soul is drawn to Christ in the work of faith. He that understands how *liberum arbitrium* may be in two faculties, must not wonder if one grace be seated in both faculties of understanding and will; no grace can be completely seated in divers faculties, but gradually and imperfectly it may; the work of faith is not compleat, when the understanding is opened only to see and wonder at the mystery of mercy in the Gospel; but when the will adheres and clasps about that infinite and surpassing good it sees, then it is perfected and not before, *Joh.* 6. 40. and this is the reason why saving faith (as it is called) doth not look only to a bare testimonie and assent unto it, as humane faith doth; because in the Gospel not only divine truth is propounded to the mind to assent unto; but an infinite and eternal good is offered to

the heart and will of man to embrace, and thence it is, that it is not sufficient for a Christian to believe God, or to believe Christ, but he must also believe in him, or else he cannot be saved; the object of believing of him being *verum*, or truth; the object of the second *bonum*, or good; take heed therefore a poor lost sinner, undone in its own eyes for ever, not knowing what to do, unless it be to lye down, and lye still at Gods feet, as worthy of nothing but hell; What doth the Lord now do? The Lord Christ by his Gospel first lets in a new light, and it sees the Lord Jesus there bleeding before its eyes, and held forth as a propitiation to all those that believe, to all that come to him; the minde sees this mystery, this exceeding rich grace and free mercy, and thinks happy are they that share in this mercy, but will the Lord look upon such a nothing as I? can such infinite treasures be my portion? the Lord therefore calls, and bids him come away and enter into the possession of it: Thy sins indeed are great, saith the Lord, yet remember, blood-thirsty *Manassch*, persecuting *Paul*, was pardoned; Nay, remember my grace is free, for whose sake I invite thee: I beseech thee to come in, thy wants indeed are exceeding many, yet remember that thou hast therefore the more need and more cause to come, and that it is I that have made thee empty and poor on purpose, that thou mightst come; it is true,

true, I have an eternal purpose to exclude many thousands from mercy, yet my purpose is unchangeable, never to cast off any that do come for it; I never did it yet, I will not do it unto thee if thou dost come: It is true, many may presume, yet it is no presumption, but duty to obey my great command; and it is the greatest sin that ever thou didst, or canst commit, now to reject it, and refuse this grace; come therefore poor, weary, lost, undone creature. Here-upon the heart and will come, and rest, and roll themselves upon these bowels, and there rest, thus the whole soul comes, and this I say again is faith.

Just as it is with the load-stone drawing the iron, who would think iron should be drawn by it? but there is a secret virtue coming from the stone which draws it, and so it comes, and is united to it; so who would think that ever such an iron, heavy, earthy heart should be drawn unto Christ? yet the Lord lets out a secret virtue of truth and sweetness from himself, which draws the soul to Christ, and so it comes.

May not the consideration of this be of great consolation to those that want assurance, and therefore think they have no faith? Oh remember that if thou comest unto Christ, as that poor woman of *Canan*, she had no assurance she should be helped of Christ, nay Christ tells her to her teeth, that he would not cast childrens bread to  
such



such dogs, yet she came to him, and looked up to free mercy, and clasped about him, and would not away; you will say, Was this Faith? yes, our Saviour himself professeth it before men and Angels, *Oh great is thy faith*, Mat. 15. 28.

So I say unto all you poor creatures whom the Lord hath humbled, and made vile in your own eyes, unworthy of childrens bread as dogs; yea you look up unto and rest upon mercy with your whole heart; this is precious faith in the account of Christ.

But how shall I know when the whole *Object.*  
Soul comes to Christ?

When the eye of the soul so sees Christ, *Answer.*  
and the heart so embraceth and relieth upon Christ, as that it resteth in Christ, as in its portion and all-sufficient good: many rest upon Christ that do not rest in him, that is, that are not abundantly satisfied with him; and hence their souls go out of Christ to other things to perfect their rest, and so their hearts are divided between Christ and other things; *Oh fear this*, saith the Apostle, *lest there being a promise left us of entering into his rest, any of you fall short of it*; for, saith he, *we that have believed do enter into rest*, ver. 3. So say I to you, of all delusions fear this, 'est when you come to Christ, and rest upon Christ for life and salvation, that you rest not in Christ: *I tell you*, saith Christ to those that came to him, and were constant followers of him, *John 6. 53. Except*

*Heb. 4.*  
*12,*

*you eat the flesh and drink the blood of the Son of God, you have no life in you ;* What is this eating and drinking ? Verily sipping and tasting is not properly eating and drinking, tasting your meat will not satisfie you, and therefore will not nourish life in you ; to eat and drink Christ is to receive him, as to satiate and satisfie the soul with him ; to quench all your desires, your hungering and thirsting in him, until thy soul saith, as he said in another case, *It is enough that Joseph lives ;* so Lord I have enough now I have this love, this grace of Christ to be my portion ; now you rest in Christ. For if there be some great good a man enjoys, if there be any good wanting in it, it is not possible that his whole heart should be set upon it. *Ex. gr.* a man hath food, but if he wants cloaths, and his bread will not cloath him, his whole heart will not be set upon his food, but upon that which may cloath him also : So on the contrary, if there be an eminent good, where in he finds all in one, no good out of it, that is wanting in it ; it is certain that the whole soul is carried after this good ; so it is here, when the soul so comes to Christ, as that it comes for all good to him, and so finds all good in him, that he now only supports the sinking soul, verily the whole soul is now come, because as it felt before it came all wants and evils out of him, so now it finds all fulness in him, and whither should the whole soul be carried but

but after such a good ? when the Lord calls to the soul to come and take all with nothing, take all or nothing. And hereupon it comes and drinks as it is, *Joh. 7. 37.* satisfying it self there, and professing, Lord I now desire no more, I have enough. Oh brethren, what faith there is among men at this day I cannot tell, but this I am sure was *Abraham's* faith, *Gen. 17. 1.* and *David's* faith, *2 Sam. 23. 5.* and *Peters* faith, *Joh. 6. 68.* and *Pauls* faith, *Phil. 3. 8, 9. Gal. 6. 14.* When the soul thus rests upon the rock Christ, *the gates of hell may avail*, but never prevail against such a one: he that hath set the whole world at his heels, and sold himself out of all for this pearl, and this abundantly recompenseth all his losses, such a one hath Christ his own, and shall never be deprived of him again; the Lord never gives his Elect any rest out of Christ, that they may find rest at last in Christ. When thus the soul is entred into rest, the whole soul is drawn here, & this is the great reason why many men famous in their generations and times in the eyes of others for faith, yet rotten at the heart, and then turn apostates; one proves covetous, another ambitious, another voluptuous, another grows conceited, another grows contentious, another grows formal. What is the reason of this ? Verily they did rest upon Christ, but did never find rest in Christ, and therefore their whole soul never came to him: Christ

Christ after some time of profession grew a dry and common Christ unto them, though at first they wondred at him, and he was very sweet unto them; and hence they departed from him, as from an empty dry pit in summer-time, where they found nothing to refresh them: but the Lord Jesus carries it towards all the faithful, as *Elkanah* did towards *Hannah*; though she was in a fit, much vexed and troubled for want of Children, yet because he loved her exceeding dearly, he quiets her again with this, *Am not I better to thee then ten sons?* so though they may be unquiet for some odd fits, for want of many things, yet because Christ loves them, he brings them back unto their rest, saying, *Am not I better then all friends, all creatures, all abilities, all spiritual created excellencies?* and hereby they find rest to their souls in him again.

**Object:**

But is there any Believers heart so knit unto Christ, but that there is a heart also after other vanities? do they find such rest in him, as that they find no disquietness? is there not an unregenerate part and much unbelief remaining? is any mans faith made perfect, that the whole soul must come, or else there is no true faith?

**Ans.**

It is true, there is an unregenerate and a regenerate part in a godly man, but not a heart and a heart (the note of a wicked man in Scripture phrase) there are disquietings in the hearts of Saints, after that they be in Christ,

Christ, even *Solomon* himself may sometime seek out of Christ for rest in his orchards and gardens, knowledge and wisdom; yet there is a great difference between these that are in the Saints arising from the unregenerate part, and those that be in the wicked arising from a heart and a heart, or a double heart, and this difference is chiefly seen in two things.

A double minded man, who hath a double heart, makes not a daily war against that heart which carries him away from resting only in Christ: for Christ quiets his conscience, and the world comforts his heart. Christ gives him some rest; and because this is not full, his heart runs out to the creature, and to his lusts for more; and so between them both he hath rest; and he is quieted with this, because he feels what he sought for: and therefore he must needs have Christ, else his conscience cannot be quiet, and he must needs have his lusts, his ease, and this world too, else his heart is most unquiet; but let him have both, he is now quiet, *Micha 3. 11. The Priests teach for hire* (here the world quiets them) *yet they will lean upon the Lord too*, because this also comforts them; what do they do? do they make war against this woful frame? No, no, but bless themselves in it, saying, *No evil shall come to us*; but a poor believer whose heart is upright, it is true, there are many runnings out of his heart after other vanities, and much

I.

much unquietness of spirit, yet the regenerate part makes war against these, as Gods enemies, and the disturbers of the peace of Christs Kingdom. *Psal. 42. David professeth his tears were his meat day and night, yet 3. and his heart was wofully sunk and fallen, yet what doth he? first he chides himself Why art thou cast down, Oh my soul? and then secondly makes his mone to the Lord of it, v. 5. 6. Lord my soul is cast down, Oh Lord pity me: You shall see also, *Psal. 73. 2. his eyes were dazzled with the glory of the world, and the wicked in it, that he had almost forsaken God; yet within a little while after he gets into the Sanctuary of God, and then loaths himself for such brutish and foolish thoughts, and closeth with God again, saying, Whom have I in heaven or earth but thee, v. 25.**

2.

All the out-runnings of the hearts of the faithful, and their disquietness of spirit thereby, make them to return to their rest again, and give them the more rest in the conclusion: *David was a bird out of his nest, for a time, therefore when he considered how the Lord had saved his eyes from tears, his soul from hell, returns again, and saith, Return to thy rest, Oh my soul, *Psal. 25. 13. it is said, His soul shall dwell at ease, or (as the word signifies) shall lodge in goodness; some hard work, or of trouble, some strong lust, or sad temptation, desertion, affliction, the Lord excuseth the soul withal for some time, and**

Psal. 116.

7.

long as the soul is in heaviness, and much  
 weakness of spirit, as it is, *1 Pet. i. 6.* yet  
 when this days work is done, when the sin  
 is subdued, and the temptation hath humbled  
 him, then a Believers soul shall lodge in  
 goodness; he shall have an easie bed, and  
 soft pillow to rest on at night; when have  
 the faithful sweeter naps in Christs bosome,  
 then after sorest troubles, longest eclipses of  
 Gods pleased face? when do their souls  
 cleave closer to the Lord, then when they  
 are ready to forsake the Lord, and the Lord  
 them? Certainly fire is wholly carried up-  
 ward, when that which suppresseth it, makes  
 it at last break out into greater flame; *Peter*  
 falls from Christ, yet he is *Peter*, a stone  
 cleaving most close unto Christ, above all  
 other the Apostles, because his fall being  
 greater, his faith cleave closer to the Lord  
 Christ for ever after it: *Solomons heart* cer-  
 tainly never cleave so unseparably unto the  
 Lord, as after his fall, wherein he did more  
 experimentally find and feel the emptiness  
 and vanity of those things, wherein he did i-  
 magine before something was to be found;  
 but he that hath a double heart, never enters  
 into rest, but the longer he lives, the more  
 common Christ, his truth, and promises grow;  
 they are but fading flowers, whose beauty &  
 sweetness affect him for a time, but they wither  
 before the Sun set: and therefore the  
 longer he lives, the less favour he finds in  
 these things, and therefore takes less content-

ment therein; the Lord Jesus and all his Ordinances grow more flat and dry things to him, and therefore though at first he might rejoyce (as *Johns* hearers, *Joh. 5. 35.*) in *these burning and shining lights*; yet it is but for a season, at last he discovers himself, not by a renewed returning to his rest, but by a wearyish forsaking of it.

The Raven never returned to the Ark again, because he could live upon the floating carrion on the waters; whereas the Dove finding no rest there, returns again.

#### *Fourthly, The end of Faith.*

This is the fourth particular in the description of faith: The whole soul cometh to Christ, *for Christ and all his benefits*; and this is the end of faith, or of a believers coming unto Christ: The end of faith is sometimes expressed by a general word, *Life*, *John 5. 40.* but you must remember, that hereby is meant the Lord of Life first, and so all the blessings of life.

The falseness and hypocrisie of Christs followers appeared in this, *John 6. 26.* *You seek me*, saith Christ, *for loaves*, that was their end; as many a one in these days, if they be in outward misery, seek unto Christ for outward mercy, corn in time of famine, health in time of sickness, peace, upon any terms, in time of war; and if they be in any inward distress, now they seek to Christ

for



for comfort and quier, and so like many sick Patients desire the Physician, not to have him married to them, but for some of his Physick only, to be healed by him: But what saith our Saviour to these persons? *v. 27. Labour not for the meat that perisheth*; what should be the end of their labour then? he tells them, *but for that bread that endures to everlasting life*; what is this bread? see the 33, 35, and 48. verses, he tells them, *I am the bread of life*; seek for me therefore, come for me; and look as none can have life from the bread, unless he first feed upon the bread it self, so none can have any life or benefit from Christ, that comes not first to Christ for Christ. Conceive it thus: God in Christ is the compleat object of faith under a double notion.

First, As sufficient, in being all we want unto us.

Secondly, As efficient, in communicating all to us, and doing all for us.

In the first respect he is *Elshaddai* in his promise; In the second respect he is *Jehovah*, *Exod. 6. 3.* in making good his all-sufficient promise; hence faith comes to him for a double end;

First, That he would give himself and be all to it.

Secondly, That he would communicate all his blessings and the benefits also, and do all for it.

For in the Covenant of Grace, the Lord

doth not only promise a new heart, pardon of sin, with the rest of those spiritual benefits, but also himself, *I will be their God, and they shall be my people.* Hence faith comes first for that which the Lord principally promiseth, *viz.* God himself, and then for all the rest of those heavenly and glorious benefits; and hence it is, if any man come for Christ himself, without his benefits, and regard not the conveyance of them, as the Familists at this day do, who abolish all inherent Graces, and some of them all Ordinances, because Christ is all to them; or if any come for the benefits of Christ without Christ himself, as many among ourselves do, who never account themselves happy in him but only by some abilities they receive from him; neither of these come with a single eye, nor fix a right end in their closing with Christ: you must first come for Christ himself, and so for all his benefits.

For establishing your hearts in which truly consider these things.

1. Consider what drives any man to Christ:

Is not sense of wants no main thing? Now what are a Christians wants when the Lord hath humbled him? are they not first want of Christ; and secondly of all the benefits of Christ, *viz.* righteousness, peace, pardon, grace, glory, *Jo. 16. 9.* If therefore, souls of all the elect feel a want of both,

not faith come to Christ for both? *1 Joh. 4. 10. If thou knewest the gift of God (i. e. the worth of him, and thy want of him) thou wouldst ask, and he would give thee water of life.*

2. What doth the Lord offer in the Gospel? is it not first Christ himself, and then all the benefits of Christ? *Isa. 9. 6, 7. To us a son is born, to us a son is given;* In the receiving therefore of Christ by faith, what should the soul aim at, but that it may have the Son himself and so all his benefits with him?

3. Can any man have eternal life, that not only hath not the benefits flowing from the Son, but that wants the Son himself? I am sure the Apostle expressly affirms it, *1 Jo. 5. 12. He that hath the Son hath life, he that hath not the Son hath not life:* Faith therefore must come for Christ himself: As in marriage, the woman consents first to have the man, and so to have all other benefits that will necessarily follow upon this.

4. The happiness of all the Saints consists in two things, First, union to Christ: Secondly, communion with Christ. Faith therefore pitcheth first upon Christ himself, that it may have sure and certain union to him (for our union is not unto any of the benefits flowing to us from Christ; we are not united unto forgiveness of sins, peace of conscience, nor holiness, &c. but unto the person

of the Son of God himself) and then secondly, cometh, for the communication of all his benefits arising only from union; as Paul, *Phil. 3. 9, 10.* esteems all things *done* and loss, first, to be found in him, that *so* he might have his righteousness in justification, and feel the power of his death and resurrection in sanctification, &c. In one word, Faith first buys the pearl it self, and then seeks to be enriched by it; it finds the treasure of grace, glory, peace, mercy, favour, reconciliation in Christ, but then buys the field it self, that it may have the treasure also, *Mat. 13. 44.* The Lord Christs great desire is, that all his might be with him to see his glory, *Jo. 24. 17.* and faith desires first to have him, and be for ever with him, and so to partake of that glory: The Lords great p<sup>r</sup>ior is, first, to perfect the Saints in Christ, *Col. 2. 10.* *Ye are compleate in him*; then to make them like to Christ, by communicating life, grace, peace, glory from him, *Col. 3. 3, 4.* *1 Joh. 3. 1, 2.* Faith therefore first quiets it self in him, then seeks for life from him; it comes first for Christ, and then for all the benefits of Christ.

Oh that this truth were well considered! how would it discover abundance of rotten counterfeit faith in the world, some seeking for peace and comfort, and catching at promises, without seeking first to have the person of Christ himself; in whom only all the promises are, *Yea, and Amen.* Others despoising

despising the benefits of Christ, especially grace, holiness, and life from him; because (say they) *Christ is all in all to them.* Ask them, Have you any grace, change of heart? &c. tush! what do you tell them of repentance, and faith, and holiness? they have Christ, and that is sufficient; they have the substance, what should they do now with shadows of Ordinances, Ministries, or Sacraments? they have all graces in Christ, why should they look for being of, or evidence from any grace inherent in themselves? they have a living holy head, but Christs body they say is a dry Skeleton, a dead carcass, and but dry bones; and is it so indeed? then look that God should shortly bury thee out of his sight; assuredly you that want and despise the benefits coming from him, shall never have part nor portion in him, at the great day of Account; Christ is a Saviour, *to save men from their sins*; not to save men and their sins; *Christ is King and Priest of his Church, holy and separated from sins*, Heb. 7. 26. and if you have any part or portion in him, he hath made you *Kings and Priests also to God* and his Father, and hath not left you in your pollution but *washt you from it in his own blood*, Rev. 1. 5, 6. *The Law of God is written on the heart of Christ*, Pla. 40. 8. with Heb. 10. 5, 6, 7. and if ever he wraps you up in the Covenant of Grace, *he will write his law in your hearts also*, Heb. 8. 10.

Let all deluded Familists tremble at this, that in advancing Christ himself, and free grace, abolish and despise those heavenly benefits which flow from him unto all the Elect. Let others also mourn over themselves, that have with much affliction been seeking after Christs benefits, peace of conscience, holiness of heart and life, promises to assure them of eternal glory, but have not sought first to embrace and have the person of the Lord Jesus himself.

Eph. 3.  
14, 18.

Oh come! come therefore to the Lord Jesus for Christ himself, and for all his benefits; I say for *All* his benefits. This is that which the Apostle prays for *with bended knees* for the Ephesians, *that they might* (not take in a little, but) *comprehend the height, depth, breadth, length of Christs love, that so you might be filled with all the fulness of God.* This is that which our Saviour expressly with much vehemency calls for, *John 7. 37. Let all that thirst come unto me, and drink; not sip and taste a little, as Reprobates and Apostates do, Heb. 6. 4, 5. but drink, and drink abundantly, as it is, Can. 5. 1.* And observe it, that upon these very terms the Lord renders grace and mercy, *Rom. 5. 17. the Apostle doth not say, They that receive a little, but abundance of grace, shall reign by righteousness unto eternal life. Open thy mouth wide and I will fill it, Psal. 81. 11, 12.*

And most certainly this is one principal difference

difference between the faith of the Elect  
 and the Reprobates (and if I mistake not,  
 the principal) the Elect close with Christ for  
 that end, for which the Father offers him,  
 which is that they might possess his Son, and  
 all his benefits; and therefore come poor and  
 empty, for all; the Reprobate come not  
 for all, but for so much and no more then  
 will serve their own turn; in misery they  
 would have Christ to deliver them, but what  
 are they for spiritual mercies? in trouble  
 of conscience, or after their soul falls into  
 filthy lusts and sins, they come to Christ  
 to forgive them and comfort them, but what  
 are they for holiness, and a new nature?  
 Some sins they would have Christ save them  
 from, but they regard not redemption from  
 all; they cannot come to Christ, that all  
 the powers of darkness may be perfectly  
 subdued, that their own sins, and selves, con-  
 sciences, and wills, may be led away captive  
 by this mighty conquerour, that Christ and  
 all his authority, grace, peace, life, glory,  
 might be for ever advanced in them and by  
 them. It was *Austins* complaint in his  
 time of many of his hearers, that *Christum*  
*sequi*, to have Christ was pleasing to  
 them; but *sequi Christum*, to follow Christ,  
 was heavy. To close with Christs per-  
 son is sweet to many; but to close with his  
 will, to come to him that he may give them  
 a heart to lye under it, this benefit they de-  
 sire not. All Christ is useless and needless;

but

but something from Christ is precious to them: for the Lord Jesus like beloved heed of this delusion; If any thing hath been bought for us at a dear rate, and cost much, if the man should offer to hold any part of it back, we will not abate him any thing, we will have it all, because it cost dear; I tell you pardon of sin, peace with God, the adoption of Sons, the Spirit of Grace, perseverance to the end, the Kingdom of Glory, the Riches of Mercy, have been bought for you by a dear and great price, the precious blood of Christ; and therefore if the Justice of God should hold back any thing, or thy own belief tell thee these are too great and many for so vile a creature as thou art to enjoy, yet abate the Lord nothing, say thou art vile, yet Christs blood thou bought not some, but all these, is very precious, and therefore take them all to thyself, as thy portion for ever, and *bless the Lord*, as David doth, *Psa. 16. 7. that gave thee this counsel*. Whilst you are in peace, it may be you may neglect so great salvation; but the time of distress and anguish may come, wherein you may feel a need of all, even of those hidden depths of mercy above your reach and reason; and therefore, as Bees, gather in your honey in summer time, and with Joseph lay up in these times of plenty, wherein the exceeding Riches of Grace is opened and poured out at your heels, for those times of approaching famine, and



and for those many years of spiritual desolation and distress, wherein you may think, can it stand with the honour of God to save such a poor sinful creature as I am? what iron heart is not drawn by this love, for the Lord to invite you to possess *All* or nothing? *Dives* in hell was desirous of a drop to cool his tongue, and behold the very depths and seas of grace are opened, for thee to come in and partake of, if the Lord Jesus should be offered unto thee to pardon some sinnes, but not all; to pardon all sins, but not to heal thy nature also; or to heal some backslidings, but not all; to supply thy spiritual wants, but not outward also, as may be best for thee; or to supply outward, but not inward and spiritual; if he should offer to do thee good in this life, but not in death, nor after death, you might refuse to come in; but when all is offered, all that mercy, which no eye ever saw, to pity thee; all that love wherewith *Abraham, David, Paul, &c.* were embraced, now to refuse to come up and possess these, how can you escape the forest vengeance of a jealous God, that neglect so great salvation? Oh Lord! what extremity of anguish and bitterness wilt thou one day be in, when the contempt of this grace, glowing upon thy conscience, shall press thee down with these thoughts, I am now under all misery, but I might have had all Gods grace, and Christs glory, but wretch that I am, I would not. Methinks

if your own good hereby should not draw you, yet the exceeding great glory the Lord shall have thereby, shall force you to accept of all this grace; for if thou dost receive a little grace, believe a little mercy toward thee, this makes thee sometimes exceeding thankful, doth it not? and the very hope of more makes thy heart break forth into a holy boasting and glorying in Christ. *Who is a God like unto thee?* Suppose therefore you drank in all, and received all that which the Lord freely offers, should not the Lord be exceedingly magnified then? couldst thou contain thy self then without crying out, *Oh Lord now let thy servant depart in peace for my eyes have seen, and my soul hath now possession of thy salvation?* Wouldest thou not call to the Hills, and Seas, and Earth, and Heavens, and Saints, and Angels, to break forth into glorious praises, and bless this God.

*Object.*

But what have I to do to come, that am so poor, and empty, and full of woes, and wants, and sins? never was any so miserable, and blinde, and naked as I.

*Ans.*

If Faith cometh for all to Christ, and fetcheth all from him, then never be discouraged because thou hast nothing to begin unto him; let all thy wants and miseries be arguments and motives therefore to come unto him, *Rev. 3. 17, 18. Because thou art poor, and naked, nay, because thou knowest it not, and art not affected with it, therefore come unto*

unto me, and buy eye-salve, and gold, and  
 whiterayment. Lord, pardon my sin, saith  
 David, because it is great: have mercy up-  
 on me, for I am consumed with grief, and  
 am in trouble. Let mercy and truth con-  
 stantly preserve me, for innumerable evils  
 have compassed me round about. Let us re-  
 turn unto the Lord, because he hath wounded  
 us; I am a dog, therefore let me have crums,  
 said the woman of Canaan: Oh this is cross  
 to sense and reason! and we cannot believe,  
 while we are so exceeding poor, empty, vile,  
 that the Lord should look upon us; but  
 beloved, you little think what wrong  
 you do to your selves, and the Lord Jesus  
 hereby: For by this means Christ is not  
 so much exalted, nor the creature humbled,  
 both which concurring in Faith, make those  
 acts of Faith most precious; for while  
 you stand upon something, and would have  
 something to bring to Christ, you here-  
 by exalt your selves; but when you come  
 with sense of nothing else but woes and  
 wants, and see Christ now making of you  
 welcome; Oh this is not only mercy, but ra-  
 vishing mercy. If you should come with  
 sense of somewhat to Christ, and to see his  
 love to you; you might glorifie mercy, in  
 the height, and length, and breadth of it,  
 but not in the depth of it, unless you see it  
 reaching its hand to you, when you are fallen  
 into so low and poor a condition as nothing-  
 ness, and emptiness, and misery it self.

And

Psal. 35.

11. &amp;

31. 9.

Psal. 40.

11, 12.

Hof. 6.

And therefore do not come to Christ only for the benefits of the Covenant, but for the condition of it also, when you feel want of Faith it self, as *Hazakiah* did, *Isa.* 38. 14. *Lord I am oppressed, undertake for me, 1 Kings* 8. 57, 58. Do not undertake to fulfill any part of the Covenant, or any condition in it, or any duty required of thee, by thy self, but go empty to Christ, and say as *David*, *Lord I will run the waies of thy salvation, if thou wilt set my heart at liberty, Psal.* 119. 32, 33. *Quicken me, and I will call upon thy name, Psal.* 80. 18. Be strong in the Lord, and the power of his might, but not of thine own.

*Object.*

But I come for all, and am never a whit the better, but as poor and miserable still as ever I was.

*Ans.*

If the Lord keeps you poor and low, yet the same motive that made thee come, let it make thee stay; it may be the Lord sees thou wouldst grow full and lifted up, if he should give thee a little, and therefore keeps thee low; better be humble then full and proud. *Let us go unto the Lord, because he hath wounded; broken and slain us.* But they might object,

*Hof.* 6.  
2, 3.

We do come, but we find no help, no cure.

It may be so, yet it is said, *After two days he will revive us, and the third day we shall live in his sight, and we shall know him, if we shall follow on to know him, ver. 6.* His go-  
ings

forth are prepared as the morning, it  
be night for a time, but the Sun of  
righteousness will arise gradually and glori-  
ously upon thy soul.

Truly brethren, when I see the curse of  
God upon many Christians, that are now  
full of their parts, gifts, peace, com-  
forts, abilities, duties; I stand adoring the  
riches of the Lords mercy, to a little hand-  
ful of poor Believers, not only in making  
them empty, but in keeping of them so all  
their days; and therefore come to the Lord  
empty, naked, nothing, cursed in  
the sense of thy want of all things, for all  
things, and then receive with gladness, yet  
boldness and holy confidence, not only par-  
don of some sins, but of all; believe, an-  
swer not to some prayers, but all. Embrace  
not some promises, but all. It is a great ease of conscience. When  
a Christian take a promise without pre-  
sumption as spoken unto him, and given to  
him in particular? and the rule is very sweet,  
and certain: When he takes all the Scrip-  
ture, and embraceth it as spoken unto him,  
he may then take any particular proper pro-  
mise boldly; my meaning is, when a Chri-  
tian takes hold and wrestles with God, for  
the accomplishment of all the promises of  
the New Testament, when he sets all the  
commandments before him, as his rule and com-  
fort and guide to walk after, when he ap-  
plies all the threatnings to drive him nearer  
unto

unto Christ the end of them; this no hypocrite can do, this the Saints should do, and by this may know when the Lord speaks any particular to them; so I say again therefore unto the Lord for all, and in the sense of all your emptiness be abundantly comforted, that though you do not find supply from Christ, yet you come unto the Lord Christ for it: it is a certain rule, You shall not alway want that good which you come to Christ to supply, nor alway be mastered with that sin which you come to Christ with to take away: only then be sure you come for all; otherwise you do not come truly. Come first for Christ himself, and then (as I said) for all his benefits.

To conclude, this is the direct and compendious way of living by Faith, so much urged and pressed of Gods servants: for to live by faith properly, is to live upon the promise in the want of the thing, or to apprehend the thing in the promise, *Heb. 11. 1.* Now the promises are not given to the Elect immediately without Christ, but first Christ is given, i. e. offered in the Gospel, and received by faith, and then with him all things also; and therefore the Scripture runs thus, *Isa. 55. 1, 2, 3, 4. Come unto the waters and drink, and then I will make an everlasting Covenant* (which contains all the promises) *even the sure mercies of David.* The Apostle expressly disputes the case, and saith, *Where there is a Testament* (containing

ing Evangelical promises) there must first be the death of the Testator, Heb. 9. 15, 16. to whom we must first come by Faith, before we can have right to any promise, Heb. 7. 22, 25. and 10. 16, 17, 18, 22. Being justified by faith, now we have peace with God, nay we have access to God, nay now we are of sure standing, now we hope in the glory to come, Rom. 5. 1, 2, 3, 4. all follow the first.

How shall a Christian therefore live by faith? truly, first receive Christ, and come to him for the end I mention, and then thou must be sure all other things shall be given to thee. As for example; dost want any temporal blessing? suppose it be payment of debts, thy daily bread, provision for thy family, a comfortable yoke-fellow, &c. look now through the Scripture for promises of these things, and let thy faith act thus; If God hath given me Christ, the greatest blessing, then certainly he will give me all these smaller matters, as may be good for me; but the Lord hath given me Christ, and therefore I shall not want; *Psa. 23. 1. The Lord is my shepherd, saith David*; what follows? *I shall not want*: there is the like reason in all other things, suppose it be in care of protection from enemies, if the Lord hath given me Christ to save me from hell, he will save me from these fleshly enemies much more: you shall see, *Isa. 7.* a promise that *Syria should not prevail against Judah*; they

O

do bred

doubted of this, how doth the Lord seek, to assure them? you shall see, *ver. 14.* it is by promising, *A Virgin shall conceive and bear a Son, and his name shall be Emmanuel*; this is a strange reason (yet you may see the reason of it, if you consider this point) for *Isa. 9. 5, 6.* *The oppressors rod shall be broken. For unto us a Son is born, a Son is given. By faith they put to flight the Armies of Aliens, brake down the walls of Jericho, did wonders in the world.* What did they chiefly look to in this their faith? You shall see, *Heb. 11. 39. 40.* it was by respecting the promise to come, and the better thing Christ Jesus himself, which we now see with open face, and therefore he concludes, *Heb. 12. 1, 2, 3.* *Having such a cloud of witnesses, that thus lived and died by faith, let us look unto Jesus the Author and finisher of ours.* The Prophet *Habakkuk*, *Hab. 2. 5.* affirms, that the *Just shall live by faith*; What faith is that? Consult with the place; you shall see it was in the promise of deliverance from the Chaldean tyranny, yet the Apostle *Paul* applies it to faith in Christs righteousness, and that truly, because if their faith had not respected Christ himself, in the first place, they could never have expected any deliverance, by the promise of deliverance from the Chaldeans, but thus they might.

*Rom. 1.*  
17.

5. The



5. *The special ground of Faith.*

The last thing in the description of Faith is, that the soul thus comes *upon the call of Christ in his Word*; and this is the special ground of Faith, wherefore the soul comes to Christ: take a sinner humbled and broken for sin, he cannot prevent the Lord by coming of himself unto Christ, and therefore the Lord prevents him, by his gracious call and invitation to come in; *Whom God hath predestinated, them hath he called*; our translation from darkness into Gods marvellous light, is by being called. The soul is lost in humiliation, the Lord Jesus who is come to save that which is lost, seeketh it out in vocation, or calling: Sanctification is the restoring of us to the Image of God we once had in *Adam*, as corruption is the defacing of that Image, vocation is the calling of the soul unto Christ, this voice *Adam* never heard of; he did not need any call to come to Christ, and therefore *was* immediately sanctified, as soon as he was made: but we need vocation unto Christ, before we can be sanctified by Christ; we need this call to make us come to Christ, to put us into Christ; and therefore much more before we can receive any holiness from Christ, the ground of our coming by Faith is Gods call, *2 Thess. 2. 13, 14. Chosen to salvation, through sanctification* (the remote end of vocation) *and believe of the truth* (the next end

Rom. 8.

30.

1 Pet. 2.

9.

of it) *whereunto he hath called you*, there is the ground of it.

The explication of this call is a point full of many spiritual difficulties ; but of singular use and comfort to them that are faithful and called ; I shall omit many things, and explicate only those things which serve our purpose here in these three particulars.

1. I shall shew you what this call is, or the nature of it.
2. The necessity of it.
3. How it is a ground of coming, and what kind of ground for Faith.

1. The nature of this call I shall open for your more distinct understanding, in several Propositions or Theses. Our Vocation or Calling is ever by some word or voice, either outward, or inward, or both ; either ordinary or extraordinary ; by the Ministry of men, or by immediate vision and inspirations of God. I speak not now of extraordinary call, by dreams and visions and immediate inspirations, as in *Abraham* and others, before the Scriptures were penned and published ; nor of extraordinary call, by the immediate voice of Christ ; as in *Paul*, and in some other of the Apostles ; for these are ceased, *Heb. 1. 1.* unless it be among people that want ordinary means and elect infants, &c. whose call may be more then by ordinary means, because they want such means ; we speak

now of ordinary call by the Ministry of men.

2. This voice in ordinary calling home of all the Elect to Christ, is not by the voice of the Law (for the proper end of that is to reveal sin and death, and to cast down a sinner) but by the voice of the Gospel bringing glad tidings; written by the Apostles, and preached to the world. He hath called you by our Gospel. *These things are written that you might believe. By the foolishness of preaching, the Lord saves them that believe.* I mean preaching at the first or second rebound, by lively voice, or printed Sermons at the time of hearing, or in the time of deep meditation, concerning things heard; the Spirit indeed inwardly accompanies the voice of the Gospel, but no mans call is by the immediate voice of the spirit without the Gospel, or the immediate testimonie of the Spirit breathed out of free grace without the Word, *Eph. 1. 12, 13.* And therefore that a Christian should be immediately called without the Scripture, and the Scripture only given to confirm Gods immediate promise, as a Prince gives his Letter to confirm his promise made to a man before; (as *Valdesso* would have it) is both a false and a dangerous assertion.

3. This voice of the Gospel is the voice of God in Christ, or the voice of Jesus Christ, although dispensed by men, who are but weak instruments for this mighty work,

2 *T. heff.*

2. 14.

*Joh. 20.*

31.

1 *Cor. 1.*

21, 26.

2 Thes. 2.  
11, 12,

sent and set in Christs stead ; but the call, the voice is Christs ; its the Lords call, *Rom.* 1. 6. it is certain some of the messengers of Christ, called the *Romanes* by the Gospel ; yet *Paul* saith, *They were called by Christ Jesus, the dead hear his voice and arise and live ;* and when the time of calling comes, they listen to it as his call : and hence it is stiled, *Heb.* 3. 1. because the Lord Christ from heaven speaks, takes the written word in his own lips, as it were, *Cant.* 1. 1, 2. and thereby pierceth through the ears, to the heart, through all the noise of fears, sorrows, objections against believing, and makes it to be heard as his voice ; the bowels of Christ now yearn toward an humbled lost sinner, bleeding at his feet, therefore can contain no longer, but speaks and calls, and makes the soul understand his voice : so that this call is not a mean business, because the Lord Jesus himself now speaks, whose voice is glorious.

4. The substance of this call, or the thing the Lord calls unto, is to *come unto him* : for there is a more common call (or as some term it a particular calling) of men, as some to the *Masters* or *Servants*, *1 Cor.* 7. 20, 21. or to *Office in Church or Commonwealth*, as *Aaron*, *Heb.* 5. 4. and the voice there is to attend unto their work, to which they are called.

There is also a remote end of vocation, which is to holiness, *1 Thes.* 4. 7. and unto glory

glory also, 2 Thess. 2. 14. Phil. 3. 14. but  
 we now speak of more special calling, the  
 next end of which is to come unto Christ, the  
 soul hath lived many years without him, the  
 Lord Jesus will now have the lost prodigal  
 to come home, to come to him; the soul  
 is weary and heavy laden, and the Lord Je-  
 sus would easily ease it, without its coming  
 to him: but this is his will, he must come to  
 him for it, Mat. 11. 27. Jer. 3. 7. 22. I  
 said after she had done these things, Turn  
 unto me, come unto me ye back-sliding chil-  
 dren, I'll heal your back-slidings, Jer. 4. 1.  
 If thou returnest, return unto me. This voice,  
 Come unto me, is one of the sweetest words  
 that Christ can speak, or man can hear, full  
 of majesty, mercy, grace, and peace; a  
 poor sinner thinks, Will the Lord ever put  
 up such wrongs I have offered him, heal  
 such a nature, take such a viper into his bo-  
 some, do any thing for me? If there be  
 but one in the world to be forsaken, is it  
 not I? the Lord therefore comes and calls,  
 Come unto me and I will pardon all thy sins, I  
 will heal all thy back slidings, I will be angry  
 no more, Jer. 3. 12, 13. Though thou hast  
 committed whoredom with many lovers, yet  
 return unto me saith the Lord, Jer. 3. 1.  
 Though thou hast resisted my spirit, refused  
 my grace, wearied me with mine iniquities,  
 yet come unto me, and this will make me  
 amends; I require nothing of thee else but  
 to come: for Gods call is out of free grace,

Isa. 55.

1, 2.

Gal. 1. 6. and therefore calls for no more but only to come up and possess the Lord's fulness, Luk. 14. 17. 1 Cor. 1. 9.

5. This call to come, is for substance all one with the offer of Christ; which consisteth in three things.

1. Commandment to receive Christ as present and ready to be given to it; as when we offer any thing to one another, it is by commanding them to take it: 1 Joh. 4. 23. and this binds conscience to believe, as you will answer for the contempt of this rich grace, at the great day of account.

2 Cor. 5.  
19, 20.

2. Perswasion and intreaty to come and receive what we offer; for in such an offer wherein the person is unwilling to receive, and we are exceeding desirous to give, we then perswade; so doth Christ with us.

3. Promise; to offer a thing without a promise of having it, if we receive it, is but a mock-offer; and hence you shall find in Scripture some promise ever annexed unto Gods offer, which is the ground of Faith, Jer. 22.

6. This call or offer hath three special qualifications.

First, It is inward as well as outward, for the Lord calls thousands outwardly who yet never come, because they want an inward call to come; an inward whispering, still voice of Gods Spirit: and therefore it is said, *He that hath heard and learned* (not of man only, but) *of the Father, cometh unto me*

Joh. 6. 45.

Job. 6. 45. The Lord doth not stand at the outward door only, and call to open, but the Lord Jesus comes in, he comes near unto the heart of a poor sinner, and makes that understand, *Hos. 2. 14.* and the Lord makes his grace glorious, and his mercy sweet unto the hearts of his Elect; Look (saith the Lord Jesus) how I have left thousand thousands in the wor'd, and have had no other cause so to have left thee; but behold I am come unto thee, & come thou unto me.

2. It is a particular call; for there is a general call and offer of grace to every one. Now though this be a means to make it particular, yet the Spirit of Christ which is wont to apply generals unto particulars particularly, makes the call particular, that the Soul sees that the Lord in special means me, singles out me in special to believe; otherwise the souls of the Elect will not be much moved with the call of God, so long as they think the Lord offers no more mercy unto me then to any Reprobate; and therefore the Spirit of Christ makes the call particular, *Isa. 43. 1. I have called thee by name,* *Job. 10. 5. He calleth all his sheep by name;* nor that the Lord calls any by their christian name (as we say) as the Lord did extraordinarily call *Samuel, Samuel,* and *Paul, Paul,* but the meaning is, look as the Lord from before all worlds writ down their name in the book of life, and loves them in special; so in vocation (the first opening of election)

*Mark*  
16. 15.

the

the Lord makes his offer special, and so special as if it were by name; for the soul at this instant feels such a special stirring of the spirit upon it, which it feels now, and never felt before; as also its particular case so spoken unto, and its particular objections so answered, and the grievousness of its sin in refusing grace so particularly applied, as if God the only searcher of hearts only spake unto it, and so dares not but think and believe that the Lord meaneth me.

3. It is effectual, as well as inward and particular, *Luk. 24. 33. Compel them to come in, Joh. 10. 16.* Christs other sheep shall hear Christs voice, and those he must bring home; for every inward call is not effectual.

There came a man in without his wedding garment, *Mat. 22. 6, 7, 8.* whence our Saviour saith, *Many are called, but few chosen*; but this I now speak of as a calling *of purpose*, *Rom. 8. 28.* and therefore never leaves the soul, until it hath real possession of Christ, and rests there; this call falls upon a sinner humbled, not hard-hearted; and hence the call is effectual, *Mat. 9. 12, 13. 2 Chr. 30. 10, 11.* it is such a call as was in Creation, *Rom. 4. 17.* And hence the soul cannot but come, and when 'tis come it cannot depart, like *Peter, Lord, whether shall we go?* and therefore though it hath never so many objections in coming to Christ, never so much weakness or heart-

lessness



himself to close with Christ, yet he brings it home, and there keeps it, and now it infinitely blesteth God that ever the Lord gave it an eye to see, an heart to come and seek after Jesus Christ.

Thus much of the nature of this Call, now follows the necessity of it, which appears in these three particulars.

1. No man should come unless first called; as it is in calling to an ordinary office, so 'tis in our calling, much more unto special grace; the Apostle saith, *Heb. 5. 4.* that *No man takes this honour, but he that is called of God;* so what hath any man to do with Christ, to make himself a Son of God, and Heir of glory thereby, but he that is called of God? what have we to do to take other mens goods, unless called thereto? what have we to do to take the riches of grace and peace, if not called thereto? 'tis presumption to take Christ whilst uncalled, but not when you are called thereunto.

2. Because no man would come without the Lords call: *Matth. 20. 6, 7.* *Why stand you here all the day idle?* The answer was, *No man hath hired, or called us thereto.* When there is an outward call only, yet men will not come in, *Matth. 23. 37.* and therefore there must be an effectual call to bring men home, *Isa. 55. 5.* and therefore you shall see many, let there be a legal command, suppose to sanctifie a Sabbath, or to speak the truth; they have no objections

ctions against obedience unto this ; but press them to believe, shew them Gods call for it, they have more fears and objections rising against this, then there be hairs on their head, because the soul would not close with this.

3. Because no man could come, unless called, *Joh. 6. 44. No man can come unto me, unless the Father draw him ;* and how doth the father draw any man but by this call ? If the Lord should not come and speak himself, and make his call the most joyful tidings and the sweetest message that ever came to it, it would say, I have no heart, I cannot, I am not able, for *Rom. 11: 32. We are shut up under unbelief ;* and therefore the Lord Jesus, *Luk. 15. 5.* must bring his sheep home upon his shoulders, else it will lye in the wilderness of its own droopings ; whereas when the Lord effectually speaks, the soul cannot but come.

Lastly, How this call is a ground of faith, and what ground of faith.

For answer hereunto, I do make this call, considered without the promise, the ground on which faith rests (for that is Gods free grace in the promise) but the ground by which it rests, or wherefore it rests upon the promise.

The mind sees,

1. The freeness of mercy to a poor sinner in misery ; and this breeds some hope the Lord may pity it.

2. The

2. The fulness and plenteous riches of mercy, and this gives great encouragement to the soul to think; the Lord (if I come to him) surely will not deny me a drop, *Psa.* 130. 7, 8. The Prodigal comes home because of *bread enough in his Fathers house*, though he was not sure he should have any.

3. The preciousness and sweetness of mercy makes the soul long vehemently for it, *Psa.* 36. 6, 7. and makes it set all other things at a low rate to enjoy it, but when unto all this the Lord sends a special commandment, and a special message on purpose and calls it to come in, and accept of it, and take mercy as its own, and that for no other reason, but because it is commanded and called to accept of it; this puts an end unto all doubts, all fears, all discouragements, and the soul answers as those, *Jer.* 3. 22. *Behold we come, thou art the Lord our God.* As a man in great want of bread, one comes and freely offers him bread to preserve his life, the man takes it; if you ask him, Why do you take it? you are a poor fellow, unworthy of it, never did yet one hours work for it; he answers, 'Tis true, I am unworthy, but yet because it is offered me to preserve life, I gladly take it; the man doth not promise absolutely to me, that this bread is mine and shall feed me, but he tells me, if I do receive it, it shall surely be mine to feed me, and this is the main ground of his receiving it. Just so it is in faith; ask an humbled sinner, Why

Luk. 14.  
17.

do you believe? Why do you take Christ as your own? Hath the Lord said absolutely that he is yours? No, saith the soul, but the Lord freely offers himself unto me, who am undone without him, and saith, if I do receive him, he shall be for ever mine, to give life to me, and therefore I thankfully accept of him; this is the ground of faith. The Scripture sets out this in a lively similitude of a great Supper, to which many were invited; what was the ground of their coming to it? Behold all things are ready, if you come and eat, they are not yours if you do not come; but if you come at my call and invitation, then all things shall be yours. And hence it is that they that came not, were excluded; they that came were received with welcome.

I know 'tis a question of some difficulty among some, viz. Whether an absolute testimony of actual favour and justification be not the first ground of Faith? They that make Faith to be an absolute assurance of Gods favour, must of necessity maintain this assertion, and then those things will follow.

1. That a Christian must be justified before he believe; for the cause of Faith must go before Faith.

This Proposition, *Thou art justified, recalled*, is according to this assertion the cause of Faith; for no proposition can therefore be true, because we are perswaded that it is

true,

but it must be first true, before I am  
 persuaded of it; the wall is not white, be-  
 cause my eye sees it so, but it must first be  
 white, and then I see it so. Now to make  
 that justification before faith, is cross to  
 the whole current of Scripture, *We believe*  
*that we might be justified*, Gal. 2. 16. We  
 are not justified that we might believe, *We*  
*pass from death to life by faith*, Joh. 5. 24.  
 We are not in a state of life before faith,  
*when the Lord Jesus saw their faith*, Mat. 9.  
 he then said, *Be of good comfort, thy sins*  
*are forgiven thee*. The Word saith, *He that*  
*believeth not is condemned already*, Joh. 3.  
 and therefore (unless the Spirits witness  
 across to the Word) it doth not say to one  
 that believeth not, that he is absolved al-  
 ready. *To be justified by faith*, and to be  
*justified by Christs righteousness*, is all one  
 the Scriptures phrase and meaning, Gal. 2.  
 16, 17. And therefore we may as well say,  
 that we are justified before and without  
 Christ, as before and without faith. And  
 indeed this Doctrine of being justified by  
 faith, and by this means to have remission  
 of sins, the Apostle Peter affirms to be the  
 Doctrine of all the Prophets, Acts 10. 43.  
*To him give all the Prophets witness that who-*  
*soever believeth in him, shall receive remissi-*  
*on of sins*; not that they had remission of  
 sins before they did believe. I know not  
 any one Protestant Writer that maintains  
 justification before and without faith,  
 except

except learned *Chamier*; who not knowing how to avoid the blow of *Belarmine's* horned argument; that if faith be an assurance of our actual justification, then we are first justified before we believe; he affirms we are justified before faith; and therefore that when the Scripture saith, *We are justified by faith*, the reason of that (faith be) is not because our faith doth *efficere justificationem*, i. e. is a cause (meaning instrumental) of our justification, but because *efficitur in justificato*, i. e. is wrought in a justified person: but if that be the reason of the phrase, we may affirm our justification to be as well by love, and sanctification, and holy obedience, as by faith, because these are wrought in a justified person also.

Then no mans Ministry, nor the Doctrine delivered by the faithful Ministers of Christ from out of the Scriptures, can be any ground of faith, for before faith no Minister of Christ can say to any man in particular, or any men in general, that they are already justified and reconciled, and therefore believe it; but to deny that doctrine which is opened out of the Scripture by the Ministers of Christ, to be the ground of faith, is expressly cross to the testimony of Scriptures, and the end of the Ministry, and of the messengers of Christ, who have the keys of office given to them, that *what they bind on earth is bound in heaven; what they loose on earth is loosed in heaven; whose sins they*

remain, they are forgiven; whose sins they retain, they are retained, Mat. 16. 16. Joh. 10. 23. Most excellent for this purpose is the Apostles dispute, Rom. 10. You need not go up to heaven, nor down to hell, to fetch Christ himself to tell you whether you shall be justified and saved, v. 6. 7. for the Word is nigh them, ver. 8. that opens Christs heart unto thy heart. But what Word might some say is this? Is it not the internal Word of the Spirit only? The Apostle answers, *It is that Word which we preach*: whereby you shall know whether you shall be or no; but what is that Word Paul preached? is it not an absolute testimonie, that all your sins are already pardoned by Christ, and therefore believe it? No, but *thou believest with thine heart that God raised up Christ from the dead, thou shalt be saved*, v. 9, 11, 12. What can be more full? yet consider that one place more, Jo. 17. 20. *I pray for all them that shall believe on me, through their Word*. What is the ground or means of believing in Christ? It is said he expressly, *Their Word*: Is it not the Word of Christ, rather than the Word of the Apostles and of their successors, in the doctrine they delivered, is it their Word? Truly that which they delivered, was the Word of Christ, and that which is opened from their doctrine in the Scriptures, is the Word of Christ, yet as they open it, 'tis their Word and this is that ground by which all that Christ prays for

do believe in Christ ; the bare Word grant cannot perswade without the Spirit, yet the Spirit will not give ground Faith without the Word, but as by it, upon it, will build the Souls of all the Elect who are *built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Jesus Christ being the chief corner-stone*, Eph. 2. 20. *How can they believe without a Preacher*, Rom. 10. 14.

3. Then when wicked men and Reprobates are commanded to believe (as they are commanded, *Joh. 3. 19. Luk. 14. 17. Joh. 6. 38. Heb. 4. 2.*) they are commanded to believe a lye, viz. that their sins are pardoned, and they actually justified for if this testimonie be the ground of faith, then when they are commanded to believe they are commanded to be perswaded of this testimonie. But the sins of wicked men, especially Reprobates, are not, and never shall be forgiven, and therefore cannot be the ground of faith.

4. When the Spirit of Adoption, which witnesseth that God is our Father, and that we are his Sons reconciled to him, goes before faith ; but the Apostle expressly denieth this, *Ye are the children of God by faith*, Gal. 3. 26. *And because ye are Sons, God hath sent unto you the Spirit of Sons, crying, Abba Father*, Gal. 4. 6.

5. If such a testimonie should be the ground of faith, then no man should believe



but he that hath such a testimony antecedent to his faith; but this is to cross the Scripture, *Isa. 50. 10. He that sits in darkness, and sees no light, let him stay himself upon his God.* When *Jonah* is cast out of *Gods* fight to his own feeling, yet he is bound to look again unto the Temple.

6. This absolute testimonie is either the testimonie of the Word, or of the Spirit; if of the Word, as is proved; if of the Spirit, then let it be considered, whether it can be the testimonie of the Spirit, which is not according to the Word, nay, contrary to the Word; for the Word to none are justified before faith; for the Spirit to testify, some are justified before faith. If it be said that the Spirit doth not shew these to any man before and without faith; but yet it is without respect unto shewing a man his faith; for those that exclude Sanctification from being any evidence, they mean faith as well as any renewed work of holiness, and so exclude that also, then I say, the testimonie of the Spirit (which of it self is exceeding obscure) is an obscure and dark testimonie, because it clears up the predicate of this proposition, *Thou believer art justified*, it testifieth to a man, thou art justified; but it is not up the subject of it, *viz. thou believer*, it makes a man believe a testimonie, without understanding the full meaning of it; for the Spirit testifying to any man,

*thou art justified*, his meaning is, *thou be-  
liever art justified*. And I do beseech the  
 God and Father of all lights, that his poor  
 people may be led into the truth in this par-  
 ticular; for want of establishment here, you  
 little think how many delusions you may  
 fall into about your spiritual condition;  
 remember that when satan came to over-  
 throw the faith of Christ in his second tem-  
 ptation, *Mat. 4. 6.* he brought a promise  
 out of the Scriptures to him, because he  
 he held close to them, *vers. 4.* and by the  
 promise sought to lead him into tempta-  
 tion; how so? observe the text, and see it  
 was not by hiding part of the meaning of  
 the Promise from him, and in special, the  
 very condition required in the person  
 whom the promise is made; for he tells him  
 that if he *cast himself down headlong*, the  
 Lord hath not only said it, but writ it, he  
 shall give his Angels charge over him, so he  
 him from dashing his foot against a stone;  
 whereas if you consult with the place  
 whence it is cited, *viz. Psal. 91. 11.* the con-  
 dition is set down, *in all thy ways*, which  
 purposely hides from our Saviour as much  
 in him lay, Oh take heed therefore of receiv-  
 ing any testimony from Word or Spirit  
 without the meaning of it, without know-  
 ing the person thus and thus qualified,  
 whom it belongs, otherwise Satan will bring  
 you headlong to a world of delusions, and  
 you shall find the word of God appointed

direct you (through your mis-application of it) the word of Satan to deceive and damn you: do not think that this is building faith upon works; but to believe, that they that believe in Christ are justified, reconciled, and saved, is building faith upon Gods promise, yea, and his free promise too: for saith the Apostle, *It is of Faith, that it might be of Grace*, Rom. 4. 16. It is believing to have the end by the means, not the end without the mean of faith. It is true, we may see Gods favour and love to us in the cause as well as in the effects of Sanctification; but what is that cause? the meritorious cause is Christs righteousness, and the instrumental cause of applying this, is our faith; so that we are justified by faith, so seeing this, we may say assuredly with *Paul*, *Being justified by faith, we have peace with God*, Rom. 5. 1. It is true, we cannot see our justification by faith, nor the work of faith without the shining of the Spirit into our hearts; but the question is not whether the Spirit helps us to see our justified estate, but by what means, by what proposition in the word we come to see it, which we may say, is not by any such absolute testimony: thou art justified already, and therefore believe; but if thou believe and come to Christ, here is then pardon of sin, peace with God, all the blessings of Christ ready for thee, which God intends to give, and never to take away, if thou thankfully receive what God freely offers, and lays down

at thy feet. The call of Christ therefore is the ground by which we first believe ; and that you may be confirmed farther herein do but consider the glory and excellency of this ground.

1. It is a constant ground of faith, for if you come to Christ because you have assurance, or because you feel such and such graces, and heavenly impressions of Gods Spirit in you, you may then many a day and year keep at a distance from Christ, and live without Christ ; for the feeling of graces, and assurance of favour are not constant ; but this call is alway sounding in thine ear. *Oh come*, not only because thou feelest holiness in thee, but come, because poor, hungry, empty, naked, lost, blind, cursed, forsaken, full of sin ; there is not one moment of the day of grace, but the Lord beseecheth thee to receive his grace, 2 Cor. 6. 1, 2, 3. this is an open door to Christ at all times, an open harbour to put in at all storms, a heart-breaking word, *Oh thou tossed with tempests, and not comforted, come unto me and thou shalt find rest to thy sou!* Many ask, how shall I come to Christ, seeing that I have no promise belonging to me ? what have dogs to do with childrens bread ? be it so, yet Gods call, command, beseechings to come in, should be ground unto thee to come ; as a poor beggar, that hath no promise absolutely given him of reliefe, yet if a rich man send

to him, and bids him come to his door and wait, he thinks he hath good ground and warrant to comẽ.

2. It is a sure ground against all fears, all doubts of presumption, all sense of unworthiness, and of the greatness of the good promised, &c. For the Saints have many fears whereby they dare not come, they fear they may presume, they see themselves most vile, and unworthy of the least smile, the benefits are so exceeding great to which they are called, that they think it is too good for them, &c. but beloved when the Soul sees evidently, the Lord invites me, persuades me, commands me, waits for me, strives with me that I would come in, and because his grace is free, therefore requires no more but only to come and *take, come and drink*; this forceth the soul to confess, I am sure it is no presumption to obey the call of Christ; and what though I am unworthy, and this good is exceeding great and precious, yet if it be the Lords grace to call to such a poor wretch to receive and accept of it, why should not I rather thankfully receive it, then out of my own head superstitiously refuse it? but this I am sure and certain of, the Lord calls me thus to do: If God should speak from Heaven to you to come unto his Son, it is not so sure a ground as the call of GOD from out of the Oracle of his Word, in the blessed Gospel of his dear Son.

3. It is of strong ground, and of great power and efficacie to force the soul to come; for you may object, no man can believe or should believe, and come of himself. I say so too; but how would you have the Spirit of Christ enable you to come? verily it is by this call, and therefore, *Jer. 3. 22.* when the Lord said, *Return ye back sliding children,* they presently answered, *Lord we come; the dead shall hear this voice of the Son of God, and live, Jo. 5. 25.* Thou saidst, *Seek ye my face,* my heart answered, *Lord thy face will I seek.* Oh iron, stony, adamantine heart, that canst hear so sweet a voice as this word *come*, and yet not be overcome!

This call honours grace most, for what more free, then for the Lord to say, *Come and take of the water of life freely?* what more free, then for a rich man to enquire of his debtor only to receive so many thousands of him to pay his debts, and to set him up again? Verily Brethren, as the Lord honours his grace by commanding us to come, so we honour it, when through the mighty power of the same call, we do come.

Thus much for explication of this call; now let me put an end to it in a word of application.

Use.

Let this perswade all sorts of persons, young and old, one and another to whom the Gospel is sent, to come in to Jesus Christ; for

for those that God calls should come ; but the Lord calls (at least outwardly) all sorts of persons, nay, every individual person to come in, *Mar. 16. 15, 16.* Paul told the stout Jaylor, *If thou believest thou shalt be saved :* and look as the Law speaks particularly to every man, *Thou shalt have no other Gods, &c.* so doth the Gospel also, *Rom. 10. 9.* that so every man might look upon himself as spoken to in particular. And indeed if there were not such a particular call, then men should not sin by refusing the Gospel, nor should the Lord be angry for so doing, but their sin and condemnation is great that so do : *John 3. 19.* And the Lord is more *wroth* for this sin then any other ; *Psal. 2. 12. Luk. 14. 18. Heb. 3. 10, 11, 19.* In one word, either the Lord would have thee (whoever thou art) to receive Christ, or to reject, and so despise Christ ; and if the Lord would have you reject him, he would then have you sin, and continue in it, which cannot stand either with the honour of God's holiness, or of his rich grace ; I shall here therefore open two things,

1. Set down means to enable you to come.
2. Shew you how and in what manner you should come.

*1. The means:*

1. Consider who it is that doth call you; is it man or Ministers think you & you might never come then; no it is Jesus Christ himself

self that calls you by them : Why do many discouraged Spirits refuse to come ? it is because they think deceitful men, or charitable men call them, but the Lord hath no respect unto them ; Oh foolish conceit ! I tell you, their Ministry is not an act of their charity, wishing well to the salvation of all, but it is an act of Christs love and Sovereign Authority, *Mat: 28. 18, 19, 20.* So that what they do, it is in *Christs stead*, *2 Cor. 5. 19, 20.* if Christ was present, he would call thee to him with more bowels then any compassionate Minister can ; and I assure you, to *receive them*, is to *receive Christ* ; to *despise them*, is to *despise Christ*, *Jo. 13. 20.* and therefore *Eph. 2. 14:* although the Apostles preached to the *Ephesians*, yet it is said, that Christ *came and preached* to them. *If any Minister preacheth any other Doctrine of Grace then what Christ hath delivered, let him be accursed :* but if they publish his mind and his call, look upon them as if the Lord himself called unto you, lest the Lord accurse you, and all their Ministry to you ; the Lord Jesus did not cast off the Jews for crucifying of him, and shedding his blood, until the Gospel of grace published by his Messengers, came to them, and that was rejected ; then *Paul* waxed bold, and said, *because you put away the Word from you, we leave you*, *Acts 13. 46.*

Oh beloved, if you did believe Christ called you poor prodigals (that have run ri-



or and sinned against him as much as you could) home unto him; suppose Christ was present, would it not draw you in? suppose he was with thee in the chamber, where thou art crying after him, or in the Church, where thou art waiting for him, & he should appear visibly before thine eyes, open his bosome, and bowels, and blood before thee, and calling unto thee to this purpose, I do beseech thee and intreat thee by all these tears I have shed for thee in the days of my flesh, by all those bitter agonies I have suffered for thee, by all these tender bowels which have been rouled together toward thee, come unto me, embrace me, lay thy wearied head in this blessed bosome of mine, crucifie me no longer by thy sins, tread me not underfoot by thy unbelief any more; and I will pardon all thy sins, though as red as crimson, I will heal thy cursed nature, I will carry thee in my own bowels up to glory with me, where all sins and tears and sorrows shall be abolished, &c. who would not now come in to him? Let me see that man that hath a heart of adamant, that would not melt and come in at this; O my beloved, this very call is done as really by Christ in his Ministry now, though not so visibly and immediately as I now describe; and therefore take heed how you refuse to hear him that speaks from heaven, *Heb. 12. 15*

Consider whom the Lord calls, and that is thee in particular, whosoever thou art, to whom

whom the Gospel of Christ is sent ; for if you think Christ calls some only that are so and so deeply humbled only to come, and not unto you in particular, you will never come in ; but we have proved this, that the Lord calls all in general and consequently each man in particular, the consideration of this may bring you in ; Men fear to commit murther, and steal, &c. but you fear not unbelief ; but the Apostle bids you fear that, *for the Gospel is preached* (saith he) *unto you, as well as unto those that sell by unbelief : Heb. 4. 1, 2.* do not say he calls me indeed, but it is no more then what he doth to Reprobates ; true, in the outward call it is so ; yet upon this ground you may think the Lord commands not, calls not you, to sanctifie a Sabbath, or to honour Gods name, because this is as common to Reprobates as unto you ; do not say I am not able to come, and therefore I am not called ; no more are you able to attend the rules of the Moral Law : yet you look upon them as appertaining to you, and because you cannot do them, you entreat the Lord to enable you, and so because you cannot come, you should look up to the Lord to draw you ; and verily many times the great reason why the Lord doth not draw you, is because you do not deeply consider that he doth really and affectionately call you ; do not say I am a dry tree, the Lord cannot look upon me, whose condition is worse then ever I heard

or read of, yet remember what the Lord speaks to such, *Isa. 65. 3, 4, 6, 7*, Look not thou to thy barren and dead heart, but give glory unto God, as *Abraham* did, *Rom. 4. 19, 20*. and receive his grace with more thankfulness then any else, because none ever so miserable as thy self; you young men this, though you have spent the flower of your years in vanity, madness and filthy lusts yet the Lord calls you in to him; you old men grown gray headed in wickedness, though it be the last hour of the day in your life, yet behold the Lord would hire you, and calls you to come in before the forest wrath of a long provoked God break out upon you; you that have despised Gods Messengers, crucified the Lord Jesus afresh, embrewed your hands in his blood, scorned and hated the Saints, and the word of Gods grace, hear what *wisdom* saith, *Prov. 1. 22, 23*. *Return ye scorers*; Oh consider, thou that art ignorant of Christ, that never sought after Christ many a year together, that have continually provoked him to his face, how the Lord calls you, *Isa. 65. 1, 2, 3*. you, even you, are all those the Lord calls, and will you not come?

3. Consider why the Lord calls thee, is it because he hath any need of you to honour him? I tell you, he could have gone to others that would have given his Gospel better welcome then it hath had from you; he could have gone to many Kings, and out of that

that golden metall have made himself vessels of honour, rather then out of such base mould as thou art made of; he could have honoured himself in thy ruine, as in many millions of other men, and lose nothing by thee neither, he could have been blessed without you, in the bosome of his Father; or is it because thou hast done any thing for him? alas, thou hast not returned him thy nurtrels, thou hast not had so much as a form of Religion, thou hast done as much mischief to him as thou couldest, *Jer. 3. 5.* thou hast wearied him with thine iniquities, and made him serve with thy sins, and hast subdued his heart indeed by strange impenitency, *Isa. 43. 24.* the only reason that hath moved him to call upon thee, hath bin to pury thee, seeing thee running to the fire that never can be quenched, without stop or stay, *2 Chr. 36. 15, 16.* and *because thou art fallen by thine iniquities, Hos. 14. 1.* and shall this bring you home?

Consider for what end the Lord calls thee, is it not to come and take possession of all the *grace of Christ*, *Gal. 1. 6.* nay of all the *glory of Christ*, *1 Thess. 2. 12.* nay to a most near, sweet and everlasting *fellowship with Christ himself*? *1 Cor. 1. 9.* and can I say any more? can you desire any more then this? if the Lord should say unto any of us, Come into the garden, and there watch and pray with me, sorrow and suffer with me; who of us would not account

count our selves unworthy of such honour ? but for the Lord to say, Come and enter into your rest, the Land, the Kingdome of Grace and Glory is before you, go up and possess it ; Oh where are our hearts, if this call will not draw ! if the Lord should say at the day of Judgment, when the heavens and earth shall be on a light fire, and the Lord Jesus set up the Throne of his Glory, admired of all his Saints and Angels, *Come you blessed and take the Kingdom prepared for you*, would you not gladly come at that call ? Oh beloved, the Lord Jesus now in the Throne of his Glory in Heaven, behold he calls you unto a better good then that Kingdom ; he calls you to come and take himself and all his precious benefits prepar'd for you, though in thy self accursed ; and he would have you take possession of all this ? *is it not the praise of the riches of his grace ?* Eph. 1: If this be his end, then if thou wilt not come for thy own good, yet for his sake, his grace sake come.

How long the Lord hath called thee, how oft he would have gathered thee ; he hath stood so long until *his locks were wet with the dew of the night*, Cant. 5. 1, 2. It may be you are afraid, it hath been so long, that now time is past ; Oh no, for whilst the Lord call by his Word and Spirit, *now is the acceptable time*, 2 Cor. 6. 2. I confess there is a time wherein the Lord will not be found, but whilst the Lord is near unto

unto thee by his Ministry, by his Spirit, convincing, affecting, stirring, knocking at thy heart, the time is not yet past, the Sun is not yet set, so long as those beams appear, *Isa. 55. 6.* those thoughts which discourage thee from coming to Christ, whilst the voice of his call is heard, cannot be of Christ but Satan, whose principal work is to lay such stumbling blocks in our way to him.

6. Consider the greatness of your sin in not coming to him.

1: This is the *Condemning sin*; for no sin should condemn thee if thou didst come to him, *Joh. 3. 17, 18, 19.* thou shouldst please him, and as it were make him amends for all the wrong thou hast done him, by coming to him, *Heb. 11. 5, 6, 7:*

*Joh. 15.  
22.*

2. This aggravates all other sins, *If I had not spake to them* (saith Christ) *they had had no sin, i.e. comparatively; but now they have no cloke for their sin:* can the sin of Devils be so great as thine, that never had a Saviour sent unto them? yet thou hast one sent and come out of Heaven to thee, calling to thee from Heaven, and yet thou despisest him.

3. This provokes the Lord to most unappeasable and unquenchable wrath, *Heb. 3. 11. I swear in my wrath they should not enter into my rest;* after sins against the Law, the Lord did not swear man should dye (for that notes an unchangeable purpose) but

Christ be despised, the Lord now swears in his wrath against such a one: *He that draws back my soul shall take no pleasure in him*, Heb. 10. 38. after sin against the Law, the Lord took pleasure in glorifying his grace upon man fallen; but if you draw back, from the grace of Christ in the Gospel, the Lord will take no pleasure in you.

4. It provokes the forest and most unsupportable wrath, *Take heed you despise not him that speaketh*, for if they did not escape who despised him that spake on earth; much less will we that despise him that speaks from heaven, Heb. 12. 25. Take heed therefore you despise not him that speaketh; the word despise signifies in the original, to despise or refuse upon some colour of reason: every man hath some seeming reason against believing; one thinks time is past; another thinks he is excluded by some antecedent degree of election; another thinks he is not humble, nor holy enough; another makes excuse, not by pretending his ale-house and whore-house, but his farm and merchandize, Mat. 22. another thinks he is well enough without Christ, &c. Oh take heed, for the wrath of God most intolerably is your portion, the lowest dungeon of darkness is thy place in hell for this sin, *Hear ye despisers and wonder, for I will work* (saith the Lord) *work in your days, which you shall not believe though it be told you*, Act. 13. 41. I pray you what is this work? certainly a work of wrath

and vengeance ; but what is it ? you will not believe though you be told of it, Oh you secure sinners ; but what is it that they will not believe ? nay truly the Lord himself is silent there, and saith nothing, as if it was so great and dreadful , that the glorious Lord himself is not able to express it ; and truly no more am I : Oh therefore be not worse then that generation of Vipers that came in to John because some had forewarned them to escape the wrath to come, Mat. 3. but come unto a Saviour, that you may be ever blessed with him.

But you will say,

How should we come to him ?

*Ans.*

1. Come to him mourning and loathing your selves for your long continuance in refusing of him, Jer. 31. 9. Ezek. 6. 9. Come mourning for all thy sins, but especially for this, that thou hast slighted him, and not sought him, shed his blood, rent his bowels ; and if thou canst not come, yet come to him and make thy moan to him, of thy unbelief and inability to come.

2. Come with confidence, that *they that do come he will never cast away*, and that thou being come he will never cast thee away, Joh. 6. 37. Heb. 10. 22.

*Acts 2.*  
39. and  
3. 47.

3. Come gladly and willingly, glorying his grace, but abasing thy self : *With gladness shall they be brought and enter into the Kings presence*, Psal. 45. 15. Do not receive Gods grace as a common thing,

thank



thankfully and withal thy heart: for the end why the Lord gives Christ to any man is the glory of his grace; if the Lord attains his end he desires no more; for why should he, when he hath his end?

Do not come and taste, but *come and drink*, Joh. 7. 37. you may famish to death and pine away in your iniquities, and prove hostates, even to commit the unpardonable sin, if you do but *taste* of him, as those of *Heb. 6. 4, 5.* but drink abundantly, *ye beloved of the Lord, Cant. 5. 1.* If you cannot satisfie your souls by what you feel already received from him, then satiate your souls by what you may find in him, *Isa. 45.* take possession of all the grace, glory, and promises of the Lord Jesus, and leave not a hoof behinde thee, and be for ever refreshed and comforted therein.

So come to him, as that *you keep your conscience*, and keep your Savour of him, and abide in him, *Heb. 3. 14.* with 16. let the Lord that called you be ever sweet and precious, as David said, *Psal. 119. 53. I will not forget thy Precepts, for by them thou hast quickned me.* Let the Lord Jesus be ever fresh, *Heb. 3. 6.* and as *an ointment poured out*; take heed that the blood wherewith you are sanctified, do not grow a *consuming thing*, and promises, withered flowers, and Sermons of Christ and his grace (unless there be some new notions about them) as *drink*; for this is the great sin of this

age; the old truths about the grace of Christ and the simplicity of the Gospel, is as water in mens shoes; Ministers must preach novelties, and make a quintessential extract out of the Scripture, and it may be, *press blood* out of them sometimes rather than *milk*, or else their doctrines are too many as Almanacks out of date, or as news they heard seven years since; and they knew this before. O the wrath of God, upon this God-glutted, Christ-glutted, Gospel-glutted age, unless it be among a very few poor believers, whose souls are kept empty, poor, and hungry by some continual temptations or afflictions, and they are indeed glad of any thing, if it be any thing of Christ! verily I am afraid such a dismal night is towards of spiritual desertions, and of outward, but sore afflictions of famine, war, blood, mortality, death of Gods precious servants especially; that the Lord will fill the hearts of all Churches, families, Christians, that shall be saved in those times, with such rendings, rearings, shakings, anguish of spirit, as scarce never more in the worst days of our fore-fathers; and that this shall continue, until the remnant that escape shall say, *Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord*; blessed be the face and feet of that Minister, that shall come unto us in Christs name, and tell us, that there is a Saviour for sinners, and that he calls us to come.

And thus I have done with this divine

truth

much, viz: That the Lord Jesus in the day of his power, saves us out of our wretched and sinful estate, by so much conviction, as begets compunction; so much compunction as brings in humiliation; so much humiliation, as makes us come to Christ by Faith.

## CHAP. II.

*That every sinner thus believing in Christ, is at that instant translated into a most blessed and happy estate, Jo. 5.24. Phil. 2. ult:*

If the Question be, What is that happy condition they are made partakers of?

I answer, This appears in these six privileges or benefits, principally.

1. *Justification*, all their sins are pardoned.
2. *Reconciliation*, Peace with God.
3. *Adoption*, They are made the Sons of God.
4. *Sanctification*, They are restored to the Image of God.
5. *Audience of all their Prayers* to God.
6. *Glorification*, in the Kingdom of Heaven, in eternal Communion with God.

## SECT. I.

## First, Justification.

**T**HIS is the first benefit which immediately follows our union unto Christ by faith; that look as we are no sooner children of *Adam*, and branches of that root by natural generation, but we immediately contract the guilt of his sin, and so original pollution; so we are no sooner made branches of the second *Adam* by vocation, and so united unto Christ by faith, but immediately we have the imputation of his righteousness to our justification, after which we receive in order of nature (not time) our sanctification. There is no truth more necessary to be known then this, it being the principal thing contained in the Gospel, *Rom. 1. 17.* the Law shewing how a man may be just and live; but it hath not the least word how a sinful man may be just and not dye, this is proper to the revelation of the Gospel: let me therefore give you a taste of the nature of it.

Our justification is wrought by a double act,

1. On God the Fathers part, he by a gracious sentence absolves and acquits a sinner, and accepts of him as righteous.

2. On God the Sons part, procuring the passing of this sentence by his satisfaction  
imputed

imputed and applied; the Father being the Person principally wronged hath chief power to forgive; yet in justice he cannot acquit, nor in truth account a man unrighteous as righteous, unless the Son step in and satisfy; *for whose sake he forgives*: as the Apostle expressly saith, *Eph. 4. ult.* so that our justification is wholly out of our selves, and we are meerly passive in it.

Justification is not to make us inwardly just, as the Papists dream; but it is a Law-*war*m, and is opposed against *condemnation*, *Rom. 8. 33.* now look as *condemnation* is the sentence of the Judge, condemning a man to dye for his offences or sin, so *Justification* is the sentence of God the Father, absolving a man from the guilt and punishment of sin for the sake of the righteousness of Christ.

That you may more particularly understand me, take this description of it.

*Justification is the gracious sentence of God the Father, whereby for the satisfaction of Christ, apprehended by faith, and impured to the faithful, he absolves them from the guilt and condemnation of all sin, and accepts them as perfectly righteous to eternal life.*

Let us open the particulars herein briefly in several Queries

What

*Quest.*

*Ans.*

1. What it is in general to justify?

'Tis to pass sentence of absolution; to pronounce a sinner righteous; 'tis God's pardon, remission of sins; this appears from the opposition mentioned it stands in unto condemnation, as a Judge pardons a man when he saith he shall live; or a man manifestly forgives another when he gives him a promise, or a bill of discharge; so that (note this by the way that) our justification is not God's eternal purpose to forgive, but it is God's sentence published, a sinner is justified intentionally in election, but not actually till this sentence be past and published; the difficulty only here is, where this sentence is pronounced; for answer whereof note, that there is but a double Court wherein 'tis passed.

1. Publickly in the Court of Heaven, or in the Court-rolls of the World (for there is no other Court of Heaven where God speaks but this.)

2. Privately, in the Court of Conscience.

By the first we are justified indeed from personal guilt; by the second we feel our selves justified by the removal of conscience guilt. The first is expressly mentioned, *Act.* 10. 43. and *Rom.* 1. 17. The second is expressly set down also, *Psa.* 32. 4. The first is the cause and foundation of the second; the second ariseth from the first; otherwise peace of conscience is a meer delusion; the first is sometimes long before the second,

*Psal.*

*Psal.* 88. 15. as the sentence of condemnation in the Word is sometimes long before a man feels that sentence in his own conscience; the second comes in a long time after in some Christians: The first is constant and unchangeable; the second very changeable: he that hath peace in his conscience to day, may lose it by to morrow. So that you are not (in seeking the testimony of your justification) to look for a sentence from Heaven immediately pronounced of God, but look for it in the Court of his Word (the Court of Heaven) which though we hear not, sometime, yet it rings and fills Heaven and Earth with the sound of it, *viz.* *There is no condemnation to them that believe*: for hereby the Lord mercifully provideth for the peace of his people more abundantly. As when a poor debtor is acquitted, or a malefactor pardoned, I beseech you, saith he, let me have an acquittance, a discharge, a pardon under your own hand, and this quiets him against all accusers: so 'tis here, the Lord gives us an acquittance in his Word, under his own Hand and seal, and so gives us peace, *Heb.* 6. 18.

2. Who is this that justifieth?

'Tis *God the Father*, *Rom.* 8. 34. *Father forgive them*, saith Christ. And hence Christ is an *Advocate with the Father*, *1 Jo.* 2. 2. All the three Persons were wronged by sin; yet the wrong was chiefly against the Father, because his manner of working appeared

*Ans.*

appeared chiefly in creation, from the righteousness of which man fell by sin. The Father forgives primarily by Sovereign Authority. The Son of man, Christ Jesus, forgives by immediate dispensation and commission from the Father, *Joh. 5. 22. Mat. 9. 6.* the Apostles and their successors forgive ministerially, *Joh. 21. 23.* The Father forgives by granting pardon, the Son by procuring, the Ministers (where the Spirit also is) by publishing or applying pardon, so that this is great consolation, that God the Father, the party chiefly incensed; 'tis he that justifieth, 'tis he that passeth this gracious sentence, and then who can condemn?

3. Why doth the Father thus justify?

*Ans.*

'Tis meerly his grace, and out of grace. And hence I call it his gracious sentence, *Rom. 3. 24. justified freely by his grace.* What is his grace? The Prophet *Isaiah* expounds it to be not our grace, or works of grace (although wrought by grace) but *his own name sake.* In some respect indeed it is just for God to forgive, *viz.* in regard of Christs satisfaction, *1 Joh. 1. 7. Rom. 3. 20.*

*Isa. 43.*  
*25.*

The Mercy seat, and the Tables of the Law in the Ark, may well stand together, but that Christ was sent to satisfy justice, and that thy sins were satisfied for, and not anothers; thus it's wholly of grace. If therefore you think the Lord pardons your sins,



sins, because you have been less sinners then others; or if you think the Lord will not pardon your sins, because you are greater sinners then any else, you sin exceedingly against the riches of Gods grace in this point.

4. What is the mean by which the Father doth thus justify?

'Tis for the satisfaction or by the price of the Redemption of Christ, *Rom. 3. 24. Rom. 5. 10. Eph. 1. 7.* for Mercy would; but Justice could not forgive, without satisfaction for the wrong done. Hence Christ satisfies, that grace and mercy might have their full scope of forgiving. So that, neither works before conversion, which are but glittering sins, *Rom. 1. 18.* nor works of grace in us after conversion, can be causes of our justification; for *Abraham*, when he was justified and sanctified, yet *had not whereof to boast*, but *believed in him that justified the ungodly*, *Rom. 4. 5.* And the Apostle *Paul* saith expressly, *We that believe have believed that we might be justified*, *Gal. 2. 16.* 'tis therefore the price of Christs Redemption which doth procure our justification. But understand this aright, for this price is not applied to each particular man, as the *common price*, redeeming all (for then every Believer should be accounted a Saviour, and Redeemer of all) but as the price of those souls in particular, to whom it is specially intended, and particularly applied.

Christs

*Ans.*

Christs righteousness is sufficient to justify all to whom it is imputed, but it is no further imputed then to the attaining the end of imputation, *viz.* to justify and save me in particular, not to make me a head of the Church, or a common Saviour: It argues a man weakly principled, that denies the necessity of Christs satisfaction to our justification, because forsooth every Believer should then be a Redeemer.

By *Satisfaction* I understand, the whole obedience of Christ unto the very death, which is both active and passive, by which we are justified, *Heb.* 10. 10. *Phil.* 2. 8. that righteousness of Christ (wrought in his satisfaction) is imputed, which satisfies the Law and divine Justice, *Gal.* 4. 1, 2, 3, 4. which is both active and passive: the very reason why the Law requires perfect obedience of us, which we cannot bring before God; is that we might seek for it in Christ, that fulfilled all righteousness: and therefore he is called *The end of the Law for righteousness*, *Rom.* 10. 3, 4. And it is strange that any should deny Justification by Christs active obedience, upon this ground, *viz.* because that *by the works of the Law, which satisfy the Law, shall no sinner be justified*; and yet withal say, that we are justified by that which satisfies the Law.

This righteousness of Christ is not that of the God-head (for then what need was there for Christ to do or suffer?) but that which

was wrought in the Man-hood.

And hence it is finite in it self, though infinite in value, in that it was the righteousness of such a person.

This righteousness of God may be considered two ways.

First, absolutely in it self.

Secondly, respectively, as done for us.

1. Christs absolute righteousness is not imputed to us, *viz:* as he is Mediator, Head of the Church, having the Spirit without measure (which is next to infinite) &c. for though these things are applied for our good, yet they are not imputed as our righteousness, and therefore the objection vanisheth, which saith, we cannot be justified by Christs righteousness, because it is of such infinite perfection.

2. The respective or dispensative righteousness, which some call *justitia fide jussoria*, is that whereby Christ is just for us in fulfilling the Law, in bearing Gods image we once had, and have now lost by sin; and thus we are truly said to be as righteous as Christ by imputation, because he kept the Law for us: and here observe that the question is not whether all that Christ did and had is imputed to us as our righteousness, but whether all that he did for us, as a surety in fulfilling the Law, be not *for substance*, our righteousness; and therefore to think that we are not justified by Christs righteousness, because then we are justified by his working miracles

miracles, and preaching of sermons, which women are not regularly capable of, is but to cast blocks before the blind; so that though Christ doth not bestow his personal wisdom and justice upon another, yet what hinders, but that *that* which Christ doth by his wisdom and righteousness for another, the same should stand good for him for whom it is done? for thus it is in sundry cases among men; Christs essential righteousness, infinite wisdom, fulness of spirit without measure, &c. is not imputed to us; yet these have conspired together to do that for us, and suffer that for us, by which we come to be accounted righteous before God: he shall be called *the Lord our righteousness*, Jer. 23. 6. This righteousness therefore imputed to us, justifies us, Rom. 5. 18. we are said to be made *the* righteousness of God in him; not the righteousness of God whereby *he is just*, but whereby we are *just*; opposed to the righteousness of man, which is called, *our own righteousness*, Rom. 10. 3. Rom. 1. 17. Not righteousness *from* him (as the Papists dream) but righteousness *in* him; nor remission by Christ only, but righteousness in Christ, this imputed justifies, as sin imputed condemns.

5. Who are the persons the Lord doth justify?

They are believers, we are justified by faith Rom. 5. or for Christs righteousness apprehended

Answ.

hended by faith, Phil. 3. 9. it is by faith, not as a work of grace, but as by an instrument appointed of God for this end. Christ did not dye that our sins should be actually and immediately pardoned, but mediately by Faith, Joh. 3. 16. Joh. 17. 10. and the Lord in wisdom hath appointed this as the only means of applying righteousness, because this above all other graces casts down all the righteousness of man in point of justification, and so all cause of boasting, and advanceth grace and mercy only, Rom. 3. 27. Rom. 4. 16. Rom. 4. 5. Rom. 9. 30, 31, 32. the faithful account themselves ungodly in the business of justification, and thence it is said that *Abraham* (though a godly man in himself, yet) *believed in him that justifies the ungodly*: he only is righteous whom God pronounceth and saith is righteous.

Now Faith above all other graces believes the Word; and a believer saith, I believe I am righteous, before God, not because I feel it so in my self, but because God saith I am so in his Son, so that you are not justified before you believe; nor then only, when you have performed many holy duties, but at the first instant of your closing with Christ, you are then to see it, and by faith to admire Gods rich grace for it.

6. What is the extent of this sentence?

The description of faith, that Christs satisfaction

*Answ.*

satisfaction thus applied, the Father doth two things.

1. He absolves them from all guilt and condemnation of sin, so that in this sense, he sees no iniquity in *Jacob*; chastizements they may now have after justification, but no punishments; crosses, nor curses; such as destroy their sins, no punishment to destroy their souls, Hence those phrases in Scripture, *scattering sins as a mist, blotting them out, remembering them no more, setting them as far as the East is from the West*: for Christ being made sin for his people, and this being imputed, he *abolishing all sin by one offering*, *Heb. 10.* hence all are forgiven; and hence it is that there can be no suit in Law against a sinner, the Law being satisfied, and the sinner absolved; nay, hence sin is condemned, and the sinner spared, *Rom. 8. 3.* as Christ died for us, so he was acquitted for us, and we in him; wee in him in redemption, we by him in actual faith and application.

Whether all sins, past, present, and to come, are actually forgiven at the first instant of believing, I will not, dare not determine; this is safe to say,

1. That the sentence of pardon of all thy sins, is at an instant, *Rom. 8. 1.* but not the sense nor execution of pardon: actual sentence of pardon, not actual application of pardon, till they be actually committed, *Col. 2. 13. Heb. 9. 12. Heb. 10.*

1. *Rom. 3. 25.* There is a pardon of course (some say) for sins of infirmities; I say there is also a pardon of course for sins of wilfulness, all manner of sins; but not sense of pardon alwaies.

2. He accepts and accounts us perfectly righteous, *Rom. 4. 3.* Faith is accounted for righteousness, not the act of Faith; as the Arminians would, but the object of it apprehended by faith; *Rom. 5. 17.* The Lord accounts us as righteous through Christs righteousness, as if we had kept all the Law, suffered all punishments for the breach of it; *Who can lay any thing to the charge of Gods Elect,* whom God hath justified? saith the Apostle, *Rom. 8.* Satan may answer, Yes, I can, for the Law saith, *The soul that sins shall dye*; Christ answers, but I have died for him, and satisfied the utmost farthing to justice in that point; True, may Satan say, there is satisfaction for the offence, but the Law must be kept also; the Lord Christ answers, I am the end of the Law for righteousness, I am perfectly holy and righteous, not for my self (for I am a common person) but for this poor sinner, who in himself is exceedingly and wholly polluted; and hence the Lord covers sins, as well as pardons sins; *clothes us with Christ*, as well as remits sin for Christs sake; and as we are accounted sinners by imputation of *Adams* legal unrighteousness, so we are accounted righteous by the second *Adams* legal righteousness

ness, and that unto eternal life, Rom. 5. 17, 18.

Thus you see *the nature*, now the Lord opens your eyes to see the glory of this privilege ; you that never felt the heavy load of sin, the terrours of a distressed conscience arising from the sense of an angry God, cannot prize this privilege; but if you have, you cannot but say as he did, *Oh blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered*; and again, *Blessed is the man whom the Lord imputes no sin*, Psal: 32. 12. The Lord pity us ; how many be there in these times, that know there is no justification but by Christs righteousness, and yet esteem it not ? Let me therefore give you one glimpse of the glory of it in these particulars.

1. This is the righteousness by which a *sinner* is righteous : The Law shews you how a man may be righteous, but there is not the least title of the Law, which shews you how a *sinner* may become righteous; this never could have entred into the thought of Angels how this could be ; 'tis crosses sense and reason, for a man accursed and sinful in himself, to be at that very time blessed and righteous in another ; to say, *Lord depart from me, for I am a sinful man*, Luke 5. 8. is the voice of natural conscience awakened, not only concerning God out of Christ, but even when God appears in Christ as he did then to *Peter* ; but this



the Lord should become our righteousness, when we think no sinners like our selves: no cases, no afflictions, no desolutions like ours, who can believe this? yet thus it is; the very scope of the fourth chapter to the *Romans*; is not to shew how a just man may be made righteous, but how a *sinner* may; or own duties, works, and reformation, may make us at the best but less sinful, but this righteousness makes a *sinner* sinless.

Rom. 4.

5.

2. By this a sinner is righteous before the Judgment Seat of God: what man that hath awakenings of conscience, but trembles exceedingly, when he considers the Judgment Seat of God, and of his strict account there; but by this we can look upon the face of the Judge himself with boldness. *It is God that justifies, who shall condemn,* Rom. 8. 32. Can Christ condemn? He is our Advocate. Can sin condemn? Why did Christ dye, and was made sin then? Can Satan condemn, if God himself justify us? if the Judge acquits us, what can the Jaylor do? Can the Law condemn? No, the Lord Christ hath fulfilled it for us, to the utmost; Oh the stings that many have, saying, What shall I do when I dye and go down to the dust? May not the Lord have something against me at the day of reckoning, that I never saw, nor got cancelled? Oh poor creatures! Is Christ now before God without spot? Hath he clear-

ed all reckonings? Verily as he is before him, so are you, through that righteousness which is in him for you.

3. By this you have perfect righteousness, as perfectly righteous, as Christ *the righteous*, 1 Joh. 2. 1, 2. and 3. 7. All your own righteousness, though it be the fruit of the Spirit of Grace, is a blotted stained righteousness, very imperfect and little; but by this, the faith of *David, Peter, Paul*, was not more precious then thine is, because thou hast the same righteousness as they had, 2 Pet. 1. 2. What sincere soul but esteems of perfect holiness more then of heaven it self? Oh consider thou hast it (in this sense I now speak of) in the Lord Jesus.

By this you have continual righteousness: what doest thou complain of dayly? is it not because thou feelest new sins, or the same sins confessed, and lamented, and in part subdued? nay some to thy feeling wholly subdued; but they return upon thee again, and the springs in the bottom fill thy soul again, that thou art weary of thy self and life. O but remember, this is not a cistern, but a *fountain opened*, Zac. 13. 1. for thee to wash in; as *sin abounds*, so *grace*, in this gift of righteousness *abounds much more*; the Lord hath changes of *garments* for thee, *Zach. 3. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7.* By means of which, there shall never enter into the Lords heart, one hard thought toward thee of casting thee off, or of taking revenge, upon any new occasion or fall unto sin.

5. By

5. By this you have eternal righteousness that never can be lost; if the Lord should make thee as perfectly righteous as once *Adam* was, or Angels in heaven are, and put on thy royal apparel again, thou wast in danger of losing this, and of being stripped naked again; but now the Lord hath put your righteousness into a safer hand, which never shall be lost, *Heb. 6. 12. Dan. 9. 24.*

6. By this you please God, and are more amiable before him, then if you had it in your self. Do not say this is a poor righteousness, which is thus out of thy self in another; why do you think righteousness in your self would be best? Is it not because hereby you think you shall please God? Suppose thou hadst it, yet thy righteousness should be at best but mans righteousness, but this is called *the righteousness of God*, which cannot but be more pleasing to him then that in thy self, *2 Cor. 5. 20.* what is Angelical righteousness to the righteousness of God? but a glow-worm before the Sun: the smell of *Esaie's* garments, the robes of this righteousness of the Son of God, are of a sweeter odour then thine can, or ever shall be, *Eph. 5. 1, 2.* 'tis said, *By faith Abel, Enoch, &c. pleased God:* their persons were sinful, their own duties weak, yet by faith in this they pleased God: thou thinkest when thou goest to prayer, If I had no sin, but perfect holiness in me, surely God would hear me, I tell you when you bring this offering of Christs

R 2

righteousness,

righteousness, the Lord had rather have that then all you can do, you bring that which pleaseth him more, then if you brought your own. For ask thy own conscience if it be possible for the righteousness that is done by thy self to be more pleasing to God, then the righteousness of the Son of God, the Lord of Glory himself done and perfected for thee.

7. By this you glorifie God exceedingly, as *Abraham believed*, Rom. 4. and gave glory unto God. *In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory*, Isaiah 45. 25. For,

1. By this you glorifie him perfectly in an instant; for you continue to do all that the Law requires, that instant you believe. The Apostle propounds the Question, Rom. 3. 21. Whether a Christian by faith doth make void the Law? No, saith the Apostle, but we establish the Law. How is that? *Parous* shews three ways.

One is this, Because that perfect righteousness which the Law requires of us, we perform it in Christ by faith. So that in one instant thou continuest to do all that the Law requires; and hence ariseth the impossibility of a true Believers Apostacie, as from one principal cause. They that deny satisfaction by Christs doing of the Law, because by our own works and doings we cannot be justified before God, may as well deny satisfaction by Christs sufferings, because by our

own sufferings we cannot be justified; our obedience to the Law in way of suffering is not truly the works of the Law, as our obedience in way of doing.

2. By this you glorifie Gods justice: whatever justice requires to be done or suffered, you give it unto God by faith in Christ.

3. By this you glorifie grace and mercy, *Eph. 1. 7.* for by this means mercy may overabound toward you, and you may triumph in it, as sure and certain to you. What a blessed mystery is this! Doth it not grieve you that you cannot glorifie God in your times and places? Behold the way, if thou canst nor do it by obedience, thou maist by faith; and thereby make restitution of all Gods glory, lost and stolen from him by thy disobedience to him.

8. By this you have peace in your consciences; by this Christs blood is sprinkled upon them, and that cools the burning torments of them, *Rom. 5. 1.* The comers unto the Levitical Sacrifices and Washings, (types of this offering of Christ) could not thereby be perfected, and be without the guilty conscience of sin: None of your duties can pacifie conscience, but as they carry you hither to this righteousness, but the comers to this have no more terrors of conscience for sin, I mean they have no just cause to have any; this Rainbow appearing over your heads, is a certain sign of

fair weather, and that there shall be no  
 more deluge of wrath to over-whelm thee.  
 By this all miseries are removed; when thy  
 sins are pardoned, there is something like  
 death, and shame, and sickness but they are  
 not; it is said, *Isa. 33. ult. There shall  
 be none sick among them; why so? because  
 they shall be forgiven their iniquities.* *Th*  
 no sickness in a manner, no sorrow, no af-  
 fliction, if the venom, sting, and curse be ta-  
 ken away by pardon of sin, thy sickness, sor-  
 row, losses, death it self, is better now then  
 health, joy, abundance, life; you may here see  
*death, hell, grave, swallowed up in victory,* and  
 now tread upon the necks of them, *1 Cor.*  
*15.* You may see life in death, heaven in the  
 deepest hell, glory in shame; when thou seest  
 all thy sins done away in the blood of Christ  
 Jesus. This is the blessedness of all you poor  
 believers, and comers to the Lord Jesus:  
 What should ye do but believe it, and re-  
 joyce in it? If the wicked that apply this  
 righteousness presumptuously say, Let us sin  
 that grace may abound, and make no other  
 use of forgiveness, but to run in debt, and  
 sin with a license: Why should not you  
 say, on the other side, Let me believe and  
 own my portion in this righteousness, that  
 as my sins have abounded, so my love may  
 abound; as my sins have been exceeding  
 great, so the Lord may be exceeding sweet;  
 as my sins continue and encrease, so my  
 thankfulness, glory in God, triumph over  
 death.

death, grave, sins, through Christ may also increase; as you see righteousness in Christ for ever yours, so you may from thence expect from him such a righteousness as may make you righteous also, as he is righteous. Tremble thou hard-hearted, impenitent wretch, that didst never yet come to Christ, nor feel thy need of him, or prize his good; this is none of thy portion, all thy sins are yet upon thee, and shall one day meet thee in the day of the Lords fierce wrath, when he shall appear as an everlasting burning before thine eyes, and thou stand guilty before him as chaffe and stubble.

## SECT. II.

### Secondly, *Reconciliation*,

THIS is the second benefit which in order of nature follows our Justification, although sometimes in a large sense it is taken for the whole work of Justification, strictly taken, it follows it, *Being justified by faith we have peace with God*, i. e. not only peace from God in our consciences, but peace with God in our reconciliation to him and his favour toward us: *Being justified, we shall be saved from wrath*, i. e. not only the outward fruits of wrath, but wrath from whence those come; Christ is first King of righteousness, then King of peace, Heb. 7. 2.

for

for is not sin the cause of Gods anger? must not sin therefore be first removed in our justification, before we can have Gods anger allayd in our reconciliation? So that as in our justification the Lord accounts us just, so in our reconciliation (himself being at peace with us) he accounts us friends; indeed our meritorious reconciliation is by Christs death; as the Kings son who procures his Fathers favour toward a Malefactor, who yet lyes in cold Irons, and knows it not, and this is before our justification, or being, *Rom. 5. 9.* but actually and efficaciously reconciliation, whereby we come to the fruition and possession of it, is after our justification, *Rom. 3. 24, 25.* Christ is a propitiation by faith, and here the Malefactor hath tidings of favour, if he will accept of it, *Eph. 2. 15, 17.* and of this I now speak: God and man were once friends, but by sin a great breach is made, the Lord only bearing the wrong is justly provoked, *Isa. 63. 2, 3.* man that only doeth the wrong is notwithstanding at enmity with him, and will not be intreated to accept of favour, much less to repent of this wrong, *Jer. 8. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8.* the Lord Jesus therefore heals this breach, by being Mediator between both; he takes up the quarrel; and first reconciles God to man, and man to God, *in himself*, in Redemption, and after this reconciles God and man, *by himself*, in (or immediately upon) our justification.

This



This reconciliation consists in two things  
 namely,

1. In our peace with God, whereby the  
 Lord lays by all acts of hostility against us,

2. In love and favour of God, I do not

mean God's love of good will, for this is in  
 election, but his love of complacency and  
 delight; for till we are justified, the Lord  
 behaves himself as an enemy and stranger  
 to us who are polluted before him, but then

he begins thus to love us, 1 Joh. 4. 10. 16.

1 Joh. 4. 21, 22. A Gardener may intend to

turn a Crab-tree stock into an Apple-tree,

his intention doth not alter the nature of

it, until it actually be engrafted upon: so

we are by nature the children of wrath, Eph.

2. 3. The intention of God the Father, or

his love of good will doth not make us chil-

dren of favour and Sons of peace, until the

Lord actually call us to, and ingraffe us in-

to Christ; and then as Christ is the delight

of God, so we in him are loved with the same

love of delight.

Peace with God, and love of God are of

different degrees of our Reconciliation: A

Reince is at peace, or ceaseth war against a

Rebel, yet he may not bring the Rebel be-

fore him, into his bosome of special favour,

delight, and love; but the Lord doth

both, towards us enemies, strangers,

Rebels, Devils, in our reconciliation with

him.

Isa. 4. 1.  
2.

5. Oh

5. Oh consider what a blessed estate this is to be at peace with God: It was the title of honour the Lord put upon *Abraham* to be the friend of God, *Isa. 41. 8.* I am unable to express what a privilege this is, is better felt than spoken of; as *Moses* said, *Pf. 60. Who knows the greatness of his wrath,* So I may say, Who knows the greatness of this favour and love?

1. That God should be pacified with thee after anger, this is exceeding glorious, *Isa. 12. 1, 2.* What is man that the Lord should visit him, or look upon him, though he never had sinned? but to look upon thee, nay to love thee, after provocation of sin, after such wrath, which like fire hath consumed thousand thousands, and burnt down the bottome of hell, and is now and ever shall be burning upon them: Oh blessed are they that find this favour!

2. That the Lord should be pacified wholly and thorowly, that there should be no anger left for you to feel. The poor afflicted Church might object against those sweet promises made here, *Isa. 27. 1, 2, 3.* that she left no love: You are mistaken saith the Lord, *fury is not in me, v. 4.* Indeed against briars and thorns, and obstinate sinners, that prick and cut me to the very heart by their impenitency, I have, but none against you. Out of Christ, God is a consuming fire, but in Christ he is nothing else but Love, *1 Jo. 4. 16.* and though there may be fatherly frowns

crowns, chastisements, reproofs, and rods, though he may for a time hide his face, shut out thy prayers, defer to fulfil promises, &c. yet all these are out of pure love to thee, and thou shalt see it, and feel it so in thy latter end, *Heb. 12, 8, 9*. Never did *David* love *Jonathan* (whose love exceeded) as the Lord loves thee from his very heart, now thou art in Christ by faith.

3. That the Lord shall be pacified eternally, never to cast thee off again for any sins or miseries thou fallest into, this is wonderful: Those whom men love they forsake, if their love be abused; or if their friends be in affliction, they then bid them good night; but the Lords love and favour is everlasting, *Isa. 9. 7*. *The mountains may depart out of their places, and the hills cast down in valleys, but the Lords kindness never shall, never can; He hath hid his face a little moment, whilst thou didst live in thy sin and unbelief, but now with everlasting mercy he will embrace thee; nay, which is more, the abounding of thy sin, is now the occasion of the abounding of his grace, Rom. 5. 20.* thy very wants and miseries, are the very causes of his bowels and tender mercies, *Heb. 4. 15*. O what a priviledge is this? Did the Lord ever shew mercy to the Angels that sinned? Did not one sin cast them out of favour utterly? Oh infinite grace, that so many thousand thousands every day gushing out of thy heart against kindness and love; nay, the greatest

greatest, dearest love of God should not incense his sorest displeasure against thee! the Lord hath poured out all his anger upon his own Son for thee, and for all thy sins, he cannot now pour out, nay he hath not one drop left (though he would) to pour out upon thee for any one sin.

4. That the Lord should be thus pacified with enemies; a man may be easily pacified with one that offends him a little, but with an enemy that strikes at his life (as by every sin you do) this is wonderful, yet this is the case here, *Rom. 5. 7. 8.*

5. That the Lord should be pacified, even with enemies, by such a wonderful way as the blood of Jesus Christ, *Rom. 5. 7. 8.* this is such love, as one would think the infinite wisdom of a blessed God could have devised no greater; By this (*v. 6.*) he commended and set out his love, which though now it grow a stale and common thing in our days, yet this is that which is enough to burst the heart with astonishment and amazement, to think that the party offended (who therefore had no cause to seek peace with us again) should find out such a way of peace as this is; woe to the world that despise this peace.

6. That being thus pacified, you may come into Gods presence with boldness at any time, and ask what you will: I wonder what he can deny you if he loves you, *Rom. 5. 2.* and which is yet more, that now

all creatures are at peace with you, Job 5. 23. as when the Captain of the Army is pacified, none of his souldiers must hurt or strike that man; nay, that hereby all your enemies should be forced to do good to you; *Oh death, where is now thy sting?*

I have oft wondered, if Christ hath born all our miseries, and suffered death for us, why then should we feel any miseries, or see death any more? and I could never satisfie my own heart by any answers given, better then by this, *viz.* that if the Lord should abolish the very being of our miseries, they should indeed then do us no hurt; but neither could they then do us any goods for if they were not at all, how could they do us good? now the Lord Jesus hath made such a peace for us, as that our enemies shall not only not hurt us, but they shall be forced (himself ordering of them) to do much good unto us; all your wants shall but make you pray the more, all your sorrows shall but humble you the more, all your temptations shall but exercise your graces the more; all your spiritual desertions shall but make you long for Heaven, and so be with Christ the more: It is now part of your portion, not only to have *Paul*, and *Apollas*, and *World*, but *death* it self, to do you good: Oh Lord what a blessed estate is this; which, though thousands living under the Gospel of peace hear of, yet they regard not; they can strain their consciences in a restless

1 Cor.  
3. 22.

restless pursuit of the favour of men, and in seeking worldly peace ; yet to this day (though born enemies to God) never spent one day, it may be not one hour, in mourning after the Lord for favour from him, nor care not for it, unless it be upon their own terms, *viz.* that God would be at peace with them, but that they may still remain quietly in their sins and war against God; and thence it is that the Lord will shortly take away peace from the whole earth, and plague the world with war and blood-shed: as it is in *Zach. 11. 6.* *Deliver every man into the hand of his neighbour, and into the hand of his King, and they shall smite the Land* ; even for this very cause, for despising the peace and reconciliation with God, you might and should have accepted in the Gospel of peace.

### SECT. III.

#### Thirdly, *Adoption.*

**T**His is the third benefit, which in order of nature follows our reconciliation, whereby the Lord accounts us Sons, and gives us the spirit and privilege of Sons : for in order we must be first beloved, before we can be loved so as to be accounted Sons, 1 *Joh. 3. 1, 2*, for the Lord of unjust to account us *just* in our justification is much ;

but for the Lord to account us hereby as friends, this is more : but to account us Sons also, this is a higher degree, and a farther privilege ; and hence our Adoption follows our Faith ; *Joh. 1. 12. Gal. 3. 26.* and if Adoption, then the Spirit of Adoption much less doth not precede faith, by Christs active obedience (our Divines say) we have right to life ; by adoption we have a farther right ; the one destroys not the other ; for a man may have right unto the same thing upon sundry grounds ; we know there are two sorts of Sons.

1. Some by nature born of our own bodies, and thus we are not Sons of God, but children of wrath.

2. Some by adoption, which are taken out of another family, and accounted freely of us as our Sons ; and thus *Moses* was for a time the Son of *Pharaohs* daughter : and of this Son-ship by adoption I now speak, the Lord taking us out of the family of hell to be his adopted Sons. Christ is Gods Son by eternal generation, *Adam* by creation ; all believers are Sons of adoption. Now adoption is two fold.

1. External, whereby the Lord takes a people by outward covenant and dispensation to be his Sons, and thus all the Jews were Gods first born, *Exod. 4. 22.* and unto them did belong the Adoption, *Rom. 9. 4, 5.* and hence their children were accounted Sons, as well as Saints and holy, *1 Corinth.*

7. 14. *Ezek.* 16. 20, 21. but many fall from this Adoption, as the Jews did.

2. Internal, whereby the Lord out of everlasting love, to particular persons in special, he takes them out of the family of Satan, and by internal love and special account, reckons them in the number of Sons; makes them indeed Sons, as well as calls them so: *Isa.* 56. 5. *Isaac* by special promise was accounted for the seed, *Ro.* 9. 8. and of this we now speak. Now this is double.

1. Adoption begun, 1 *Jo.* 3. 1, 2. now we are the Sons of God. To which of us (though Sons indeed) yet the Lord behaves himself toward them, for some time, and for special reasons, as unto *servants*, exercising them with many fears, *Gal.* 4. 1, 2. Some spirits will not be the better for the love of their Father, but worse; and therefore the Lord keeps a hard hand over them: to others the Lord behaves himself with more special respect, in making them cry with more boldness, *Abba Father*, *Rom.* 8. 15, 16. who will be more easily overcome, and bent to his will by love.

2. Adoption perfected, when we shall receive all the priviledges of Sons, not one excepted, *Rom.* 8. 23. where we are said to wait for our Adoption, the Redemption of our bodies: By the first we are Sons, but not seen or known such, 1 *Job.* 3. 1, 2. By the second, we shall be known before all the world to be such: We now speak principally of Adoption



Adoption begun, whereby we are Sons in Gods account, and by real reception of the Spirit of Sons: the manner of this Adoption is thus.

1. *God loves Jesus Christ with an unspeakable love, as his only Son, and as our elder brother.*
2. *Hence when we are in Christ his Son, he loves us with the same love as he doth his own Son:*
3. *Hence the Lord accounts us Sons, Eph. 1. 5, 6. Gods love is not now towards us, as to Adam his son by creation, v. z. immediately diffused upon us; but in loving his own Son immediately, hence he loves us, and hence adopts us, and accounts us children.*

O that the Lord would open our eyes to see this privilege; *Behold it, saith John, 1 Jo, 3. 1.* stand amazed at it, that children of wrath should become the Sons of the most high God; for a beggar on a dunghil, a vagabond, a runagate from God, a prodigal, a stranger to God, whom the Lord had no cause to think on, to be made a Son of God Almighty.

If Sons, then the Lord doth prize and esteem you as Sons: If a man hath twenty Sons, he esteems the poorest, least, sick child he hath, more then all his goods and servants, unless he be an unnatural father; I tell you that the least of you, the poorest and most feeble believer, is accounted of God,

and more esteemed then all his household stuff, then heaven, earth, and all the glory of it, and all the Kings and great men in the world, *Isa. 43. 4, 5, 6.* not because thou hast done any thing worthy of this, but only because he accounts thee freely as his Son.

If Sons, then the Lord surely will take care for you as for Sons; a godly Father hath a double care of his children. First of their temporal, Secondly, and chiefly of their eternal estate; we are ready to question in times of want, what we shall eat, drink, how we shall live; Oh consider, art thou a Son of God, and will not he that *feeds the Ravens, and clothes the Lilies*, provide for thee? *Mat. 6. 31, 32.* Yes verily, he will take care for thy temporal good. It is true, you may be brought into outward straits, wants, miseries, yet then the Lord is thereby plotting for thy eternal good; from hence come all Gods corrections, *Deut. 8. 5. Heb. 12. 8.* the Lord took all they had from them by their enemies in war, and carried them away captive into a strange land, yet, *Jer. 24. 5.* this was for their good, we think the Lord many times takes no care for us, and so make him of a worse nature then the savage beasts, or bloody men towards their young, but this is certain, he never denies any thing to us in outward things, but it is to further our eternal bliss with him, to do us good in our latter end: what say godly parents? it is no matter what becomes of my children when I

am dead, if the Lord would but give them himself to be their portion, if at last they may see the Lord in glory ; do not wonder then if the Lord keeps you short sometimes.

If Sons, then he loves you as Sons , as a father doth his Sons ; you think the Lord loves you not , because you do not alwaies feel his love, nor know his love ; is thy Son not thy child , because whilst it is young , it knows not the father that begot it , or because thou art sometime gone from it, & hast it not alwaies in thy own arms? *Israel saith, My God hath forsaken me and forgotten me,* Isa. 49. 14. and yet no mother renders her child as the Lord did them ; you think because you have so many sins and afflictions, one upon another, that the Lord loves you not : judge righteously, hath thy child no father because it is sick long together, and therefore kept under unto a spare diet ? no, he knows our mould , and that we are but dust, and freely chuses us to be his Sons, and hence loves notwithstanding all our sins *Psf.* 89. 32, 33. if he sees Ephraim bemoaning his stubbornness, as well as his sickness and weakness, *Jer.* 31. 20. doth not the Lord profess, *Is he not my only Son ?*

If Sons, then we are *heirs and co-heirs with Christ*, saith the Apostle, *Rom.* 8. 17. Sons by nature are not alway heirs, but all Sons by adoption are : we are heirs with Christ , the Lord as our elder brother managing all our estate for us, because unable to

do it our selves ; we are *heirs*, 1. *Of the Kingdom of glory*, 1 Pet. 1. 4, 5. *Heirs of all this visible world*, 1 Cor. 3. 22. not that we have the whole world in our own hand (it would be too cumbersome to us to manage) but the Lord gives us the rent of it, the blessing and good of it, though it be possessed by others. 2. *We are heirs of the Promise*, Heb. 11. 9. Heb. 6. 17. whereby *Jehovah* himself comes to be our inheritance and portion for ever ; and look as Christ was in the world an heir of all, though trod under foot by all, so are we ; What can we desire more ?

5. If Sons, then we have, and shall ever have the Spirit of Sons, Rom. 8. 15, 16. and what are we the better for this Spirit ? truly hereby, first we cry unto him, we are enabled to pray, who could not pray before, because guilt stoppt their mouths. 2. We cry *Abba Father*, and this Spirit witnesseth that we are Sons of this Father : it is not said that it witnesseth to our Spirits, but *συμμαρτυρεῖ*, it witnesseth with our Spirits, i. our renewed conscience, thus, all believers called and justified of God are Sons, but I am such a believer, therefore I am a Son, now the Spirit bears witness with us in every part, both premises and conclusion, only it being the clearest and strongest witness, it testifies the same thing our consciences do, but yet more clearly, more certainly, more comfortably, and sweetly, ravishing the soul with most unspeakable

unspeakable peace and joy, especially in the conclusion.

I know there is a *Noetick* testimonie, but it is lastly resolved into this: He not now dispute it, only this is certain, that this testimonie all the Sons of God have by means of their Adoption: They may not indeed sometime hear it; if they do, they may object against it through the unbelief in part remaining in them; or if it be sometime suspended, what you want in the witness and comfort of it, you have it in holiness of it; and therefore the Spirit sealing is called the holy Spirit, *Eph. 4 30. 1 Pet. 1. 6, 7, 8.* and is not this a great priviledge? Thirdly, hereby you are led and guided, and that continually towards your last end. For as if *Adam* had stood, he should have had the Spirit of God, this very Spirit to have kept him and all his posterity from falling at any time from God, so Christ having stood for us, justified us before God; sends the immutable constant assistance of the Spirit in Adoption, which though it doth not alway quicken us; nor comfort us, nor assure us, &c. yet it is every moment guiding and leading of us unto our utmost end. From hence it is that the same sins which harden others, at last humble us, the same temptations by which others fall and perish, serve at last to purifie us; hence our decay in grace leads us to growth at last, hence our fears and doubts serve to establish at last, hence our wildings

*Rom. 8.*

14.

from God for a time, makes us esteem more of the presence and ways of God at last; because this Spirit of adoption is that by which we are led, and constantly assisted and carried toward our latter end: Oh mourn, thou that art as yet no Son, but a slave to Satan, and unto thy filthy lusts; a servant at best working for wages only, and fear of the whip, who shalt not only abide in Gods house, as Sons shall do; nay, it may be hast hated and reviled the Sons of God; time shall come that you shall wonder at their glory, who are not known now.

### SECT. III.

#### Fourthly, *Sanctification.*

**T**HIS is the fourth benefit which follows in order of nature, our justification, reconciliation, and adoption; for upon our being Sons in adoption, we receive the image of our heavenly Father in sanctification; because we are under grace. Hence it comes to pass that we are freed from the *raining power of sin*, Rom. 6. 14. so that our sanctification follows our justification, and adoption goes not before it. In justification we have the love and righteousness of the Son; in reconciliation, the love of the Father; in adoption the love of a Father and presence of the Spirit assisting, witness-  
sing

ling, in Sanctification, the Image of our Father by the same Spirit : and this I conceive, with submission is *the seal of the Spirit*, mentioned, Eph. 1. 13. the Seal sealing, is the spirit it self ; the Seal sealed consists first in the expression of it in adoption ; secondly, in the impression of it, in sanctification, and that he only shall pass as current coine, that hath both these ; I know the most full and clear expression and testimonie of the Spirit is after all Gods work is finished in glorification, but the beginning of it is here in adoption, a fuller measure of it in sanctification ; Gods Seal is ever set to some promise (as mens seals to some bond, not to blanks) the Lords promise of actual justification, & reconciliation, pertains only to men sanctified or called : in adoption therefore we receive the spirit, which looks both ways, testifying either thou sanctified, art justified, or thou called art justified and reconciled. I speak not now of external sanctification, by outward shew and profession, and common illumination and operation of the Spirit upon men, from which many fall away, Heb. 10. 29. but of internal and special ; the nature of which you may best conceive in these three degrees.

1. It is the renewing of a man. So that by it a man is morally made a new man, another man ; *All things are become new* ; he hath new thoughts, new opinions of things, new desires, prayers, praises, and dispositions

*Tit. 3. 5.*

*2 Cor. 5.*

27.

tions, Regeneration not differing from it.

2. It is a renewing of *the whole man*, 1 Thess. 5. 23. for as every part and faculty of man is corrupt by the first *Adam*, so they are renewed by the second *Adam*; not that we are perfectly renewed in this life by Christ, as we are corrupt by *Adam*, but in part in every faculty, *Rom.* 16. 19. and from hence ariseth our spiritual combate and warfare with sin, yea with all sin; it is not because of our sanctification simply (for if it were perfect we should war and wrastle no more) but from the imperfection of it. And this renewal in part, is in all parts, even in the whole man: and as the first *Adam* propagates sin chiefly and radically in the soul, especially into the heart of man; and from thence it diffuseth it self like leaven, into the whole lump of our lives, so the Lord Jesus chiefly communicates this renewal into our hearts, and thence it sweetens our lives; and hence it is called the inner man, *Rom.* 7. 22. *Eph.* 3. 16. you see a little holiness in a Christian; I tell ye, if he is of the right make, there is a kind of infinite endless holiness within him from whence it springs, as there is a kind of infinite endless wickedness in a wicked man, from whence his sins spring; if a man be outwardly holy, but not within, he is not sanctified, no more then the painted Sepulchres of the proud Pharisees; if any man say his heart is good, though he makes no show in his life, he speaks not the truth, if the

Apostle

*Rom.* 2.  
28.



possible may be believed, 1 *Joh.* 1. 6. for sanctification is a renewal of the whole man, within and without; it is not for a man to have his teeth white, and his tongue tipped, and his nays pared; no, no, the Lord makes all new where he comes.

3. It is a renewal unto the Image of God, of God in Christ; an unsanctified man may be after a sort renewed in the whole man, his outward conversation may be fair, his mind may be *enlightened*, his heart may be *of the heavenly gift*, &c. *Heb.* 6. 4. 5. he may have a *form of godliness*, 2 *Tim.* 3. 5. he may have strong resolutions within him ungodliness, *Deut.* 5. 29. and hence with the five foolish virgins, may be received into the fellowship of the wise, and not discerned of them neither, till the gate is shut; but they are never renewed in their whole man, *after the image of God*, i. they do not know things, and judge of them as God doth, they do not love and will holiness and the means thereto, as God doth; they hate sin, as God doth, they do not delight in the whole Law of God, it is not writ in their hearts, and hence they love it not as God doth; and this is the cut of the thread between a sanctified and unsanctified Spirit, by sanctification a man is renewed unto Gods Image, once lost, but here again restored, *Eph.* 4. 24. *Joh.* 1. 16. *We receive from his fullness* for grace, as the seal on the wax is a title for title, so that in the least it self,

1 Pet. I.  
14, 15,  
16:

we are changed into the Image of Christ by beholding him in the glass of the Gospel by faith, 2 Cor. 3. 18. *I delight in the Law of God in my inward man*, Ro. 7. 23. and hence a Christian by the life of sanctification, lives like unto God, at least hath a holy disposition and inclination (the habits of holiness) so to do, Gal. 2. 19. *I live unto God*, he calleth us from darkness into his marvelous light, that we might shew forth his virtues; and that this is true sanctification may thus appear; because our sanctification is opposed to our original corruption, as our justification to our original and contracted guilt of sin: now as original corruption is the defacing of Gods Image by contrary dispositions to sinfulness, so our sanctification can be nothing else but the removal of this pollution, by the contrary habits and dispositions, to be like unto God again; our sanctification is to be holy, Lev. 20. 7. our holiness hath no other primary pattern but Gods holiness, so that our sanctification is not the righteousness and holiness in as it is inherent in Christ, for that is the matter of our justification, and therefore sanctification must be that holiness which is derived unto us from Christ, whereby we are made like unto him, and thus Christ is made sanctification unto us, 1 Cor. 1. 30. There should be no difference between Christ our righteousness and sanctification, if that holiness which is in Christ should be both unto us; hence also sanctification

Sanctification is not the immediate operation of the Spirit upon us, without created habits of grace abiding in us, as the Spirit that came upon *Balaam*, and mightily affected him for a time, but left him as destitute of any grace or change of his nature as the Ass he rode on; no, no, it renews you unto the Image of God himself, if you be truly sanctified. And therefore let all those dreams of the Familists (denying all inherent graces; but only those which are in Christ, to be in the Saints) let them vanish and perish from under the Sun, and the good Lord receive all such who in simplicity are misled from this blessed truth of God. I will not now enter into that depth concerning the means of our sanctification, in mortification by Christ's death, and vivification by the resurrection of Christ: this may suffice for explication of the nature of it. Only see and for ever prize this priviledge, all you blessed souls, whom the Lord hath justified; thou hast many sad complaints, what is it to me, if I be justified in Christ, and be saved at last by Christ, and my heart remains all this while unholy, and unsubdued unto the will of Christ; that he should comfort me, and my holy heart be alway grieving of him; what though the Lord save me from misery, but saves me not from my sin! Oh consider this benefit. It is true, thou findest a woful sinful nature within thee, contrary to holiness, and leading thee dayly into captivity; yet remember

remember the Lord hath given thee another nature, a new nature ; there is something else within thee, which makes thee wrestle against sin ; and shall in time prevail over all sin, this is the Lords grace sanctifying of thee. Oh be thankful that the Lord hath not left thee wholly corrupt, but hath begun to glorifie himself in thee, and to bless thee, in turning thee from thine iniquities.

1. By this thou hast a most sweet and comfortable evidence of thy justification and favour with God ; he that denies this, must (what ever distinctions he hath) abolish many places of Scripture, especially the Epistles of *James* and *John*, who had to do with some Spirits that pretended faith and union to Christ, and communion with him, and so long as it was thus, this was evidence sufficient to them of their justified estates. What saith *James* ? Thou saist *thou hast faith*, shew it *me then* ; prove it, saith he. He prove it by the blessed fruits and works which flow from it, as *Abraham* manifested his, *Jam.* 2. 18. 22. What saith *John* ? You talk (saith he) of fellowship and communion with Christ, and yet what holiness is there in your hearts and lives ? if you say you have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, ye lye and do not the truth ; but if you walk in the light, then although your holiness, and confession, and dayly repentance for sin doth not wash away sin, yet the blood of Christ doth wash us, 1 *Joh.* 1. 6, 7. Again

you say you *know* Christ, and the love and good will of Christ towards you, and that he is the propitiation for your sin; how do you know this? saith he: *He that saith I know him, and keeps not his commandments is a liar*, 1 Joh. 2.4. True, might some reply, he that keeps not the commands of Christ, hath thereby a sure evidence that he knows him not, and that he is not united unto him; but is this any evidence that we do know him, and that we are united to him, if we do keep his commandments? yes verily, saith the Apostle, *herby we know that we know him, if we keep his commandments*, ver. 3. and again ver. 5. *Herby know we that we are in him*. What can be more plain? What a vanity is this to say that this is running upon a Covenant of works? Is not sanctification *the writing of the Law in our hearts*, a special benefit of the Covenant of Grace as well as justification? *Heb. 8. 10. 12.* and can the evidencing then of one benefit of such a covenant by another, be a running upon the covenant of works? is it a truth contained in the covenant of grace, *viz.* that he that is justified is also sanctified, and he that is sanctified is also justified? and is it an error against grace to see this truth, that he that is sanctified is certainly justified; and that therefore he that knows himself sanctified, may also know thereby that he is justified? Tell me how will you know that you are justified? You will say, by the testimonie of the

the Spirit ; and cannot the same spirit shine upon your graces, and witness that you are sanctified as well ? 1 Jo. 4. 13. 14. 1 Cor. 2. 12. Can the Spirit make the one clear to you and not the other ? Oh beloved it's a sad thing to hear such questions ; and such cold answers also, that sanctification possibly may be an evidence ; may be ? is not certain ? assuredly to deny it, is as bad as to affirm that Gods own promises of favour are true evidences thereof, and consequently, that they are lies and untruths ; for search the Scripture and consider sadly ; how many Evangelical promises are made unto several graces, i. e. unto such persons as are invested with them ; you may only take a taste from *Mat. 5. 3, 4* &c. where our Saviour (who was no legal Preacher) pronounceth and consequently evidenceth blessedness by eight or nine promises, expressly made to such persons as had inherent graces of *poverty, mourning, meekness, &c.* there mentioned, the Lord Jesus leaving those precious Legacies of his promises unto his children that are called by those names of *mourners, poor in spirit, pure in heart, &c.* that so every one may take and be assured of his portion manifested particularly therein, that I many times wonder how it comes to pass, that this so plain and ancient principle of Catechism (for so it was among the *Waldenses* many hundred years since) grounded on so many pregnant Scriptures, should come to be so much as questioned

oned in our days; sometimes I think it ariseth from some wretched lusts men have a mind to live quietly in, desirous to keep their peace, and yet unwilling to forsake their lusts, and hence they exclude this witness of water, the witness of sanctification, to resist in the Court of Conscience, whether they are beloved of God, and sincere hearted or no, because this is a full witness against them, and tells them to their faces, that *there is no peace to the wicked*, Isa. 57. ult. Deut. 29. 19, 20. and that they *have nothing to do to save Gods name in their lips, that secretly hate to be reformed*, Psal. 50. 16. In others I think it doth not arise from want of grace, but because the Spirit of grace and sanctification runs very low in them; 'tis so little that they can scarce see it by the help of spectacles; or if they do, they doubt continually of the truth of it; and hence because it can speak little, and that little very darkly for them; they have no great mind that it should be brought in as any witness for them: others I think may have much grace & holiness, yet for a time cast it by as an evidence to them, because they have experience how difficult and troublesome it is to find this evidence; and when 'tis found, how difficult to read, & keep it fair, and thereby have constant peace and quietness; and hence arise those speeches, *Why do you look to your sanctification, a sacred evidence? you may have it to day, & lose it to morrow*, and then where is your

peace? and I do believe the LORD deprives many of his precious SAINTS from the comfort of this evidence; either because they look only to this, and not unto Christ, and their justification by faith, *Rom. 5. 1.* or else because there is some secret lust or guile of spirit, *Psal. 32. 1, 2.* which the Lord by sore and long shakings about their call and sanctification, would first winnow out, or because there is a perverse forwardness of spirit, whereby because they feel not that measure of sanctification which they would, do therefore vilifie, and so come to deny what indeed they have; because they *feel a law of sin in their members, leading them away captive*; will not, with *Paul*, take notice of the law of their minds, whereby their inward man *delights in the law of God, and mourns bitterly under the body of death*, by which they might see with *Paul*, that *there is no condemnation to such*, *Rom. 8. 1.* To conclude, whatever is the cause of this crookedness of judgement, I do believe that the general cause is, want of attendance and standing unto the judgement of the Scriptures in this controversie: for if this was stood unto, men would not produce their own experience, *viz.* that they would never find any evidence from sanctification, but they have met with it in another way, by the immediate witness of the Spirit only; we would men cry it down, because grace being mixt with so much corruption, it can hardly



be discerned, and so will be alway left in doubts, and that the heart is deceitful, and many that have evidenced their estates hereby, have been deceived: I confess thus the Popish Doctors argue against assurance of faith from the Scriptures without special and extraordinary Revelation; but what is all this to the purpose, if the Scriptures make it an evidence? away then with thy corrupt experience, shall this be judge, or the Scriptures rather? what though many judging of themselves by marks and signs have been deceived; yet if the Scripture make it an evidence (as we have proved) then, though men through their own weakness or wickedness, have been deceived in mis-applying promises; yet the Scriptures cannot deceive you: What though it be difficult to discern Christs grace in us? yet if the Scriptures will have us try our estates by that rule, which in it self is easie, but to our blindness and weakness, difficult many times to see; who shall, who dares condemn the holy Scriptures? which as they shall judge us at the last day, should judge us now. Suppose that divers books, and many Ministers sometimes gave false signs of grace and Gods favour, yet do the Scriptures give any? I shall propose one thing to conscience, as the conclusion of this discourse. Suppose thou wert now lying upon thy death-bed, comforting thy self in thy elected and justified estate; suppose the Spirit of God should

now grapple with thy conscience, and tell thee, *If thou art justified, then thou art called and sanctified*, 2 Thes. 2. 13, 14. Is it thus with thee? what wilt thou answer? if thou saist thou art not sanctified, the Word and Spirit will bear witness then against thee and say, then thou art not elected nor justified; if thou saist thou knowst not, thou lookest not to sanctification, or fruits of the Spirit, they will then reply, How canst thou say that thou art elected or justified? for it is a truth as clear as the Sun, and as immovable as heaven and earth: None are *elected and justified*, but they are also *sanctified*, and they that are not *sanctified* are not *justified*, Rom. 8. 1. 13. And now tell me, how can you have peace, unless you make your faces like flint before the face of Gods eternal truth, or heal your conscience by such a plaister as will not stick? if therefore the Lord ever made sin bitter to thee, let holiness be sweet; if continuance in sin hath been an evidence unto thee of thy condemnation, Oh let the riches of the grace of Christ in redeeming thee from the lamentable bondage and power of sin, be an evidence to thee of thy salvation. Oh bless God for any little measure of sanctification; do not scorn or secretly despise this spirit of grace, as many in this degenerate age begin to do, saying, You look to graces, fruits, marks and signs, and a holy frame of heart and sanctification; what is your sanctification? Oh let it be the more precious

precious to thee, mourning that thou hast so little, and blessing the God and Father of all grace for what little thou hast, wearing it as a bracelet of gold about thy neck, knowing hereby thou art born of God; and that *the whole world lieth in wickedness*, and shall perish without this, 1 *Joh.* 5. 18, 19.

2. This is your glory and beauty, this is glorification begun; what greater glory then to be like unto God? to be like unto God is to be next to God; and therefore this is called *glory*, 2 *Cor.* 3. 18. *We are changed into the same Image from glory to glory.* Every degree of grace is glory, and the perfection of glory in heaven consists chiefly in the perfection of grace; what is the work of some men at this day, but to cast reproach upon sanctification our glory?

3. This will give you abundance of sweet peace, and therefore, *Heb.* 12. 11. it is called the *quiet fruit of righteousness*; for from whence comes the sore troubles and continual doubts of Gods favour in many mens consciences? Is it not some decay or guile here? *Psf.* 32. 1, 2. Is it not some boldness to sin; that they *walk not in fear*, and therefore not in the consolation of the *holy Ghost*? Is it not their secret dalliance with some known sin, continued in with impenitency? Is it not because they labour with strong unmortified corruptions, that they are in pangs and throws of conscience for? *Psal.* 32. 1, 2, 3, 4. 2 *Cor.* 1. 12. What was *Hezekiah's* peace

peace when dying as he thought? was it not this? *Lord remember I have walked before thee uprightly*; Isa. 38. 2, 3. not that this was the ground of their peace, for that only is free grace in Christ, but this is the means of your peace, *Job. 14. 22, 23.* it is a cursed peace which is kept by looking to Christ, yet loving thy lust.

4. This is that which will make you fit for Gods use, *2 Tim. 2. 20, 21.* a filthy unclean vessel is good for nothing till cleansed; God will not delight to glorifie himself much by an un sanctified person; what is thy wife, children, friends, family, the better for thee, if thy heart remain un sanctified?

5. A little holiness is eminently all, springing up to eternal life; this little spring shall never cease running, but it shall fill heaven it self, and thy soul in it with abundance of glory, *Jo. 4. 14.* and *7. 38.* You despise it because 'tis but little; I tell you, this little is eminently all, and contains as much as shall be poured out by thee so long as God is God: 'Tis true thou saist it's weak, and oft soiled, and gives thee not compleat power & victory over all sin, yet know that this shall (like the house of David) grow stronger and stronger, and it shall at last prevail, and the Lord will not break thee, though thou art bruised by sin daily, until judgement come to victory, and the Prince of this world be judged, and thy soul perfected in the day of the Lord Jesus.

## SECT. V.

Fifthly, *Audience of all Prayers.*

THIS is the fifth benefit, which though it be a fruit of other benefits, yet I name it in special, because I desire it might be specially observed; and I place it after our sanctification, because of *David's* speech; *If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear my prayer*, *Psal. 66. 18.* and that of the Apostle, *1 Joh. 3. 22. We believe what ever we ask we receive, because we keep his commandments, and do those things which are pleasing in his sight:* As the Lord hath respect to the prayers of his people, not only in regard of their justification, but in some sense in regard of their sanctification also; a justified person, polluted with some personal or common sins of the times, may want that audience and acceptance of his prayers I am now speaking of. That God will hear all the petitions of his people, can there be a greater privilege then this! yet this our Saviour affirms twice together, because it is so great a promise, that we can hardly believe it, *Joh. 14. 13, 14. Whatsoever you ask the Father in my name, that will I do;* mark the scope of the words, our Saviour had promised, that *he that believes in me shall do greater works than I have done:* now because this might seem strange and impossible

sible, the Lord in those verses tells them how, for (saith he) *Whatsoever you ask in my name I will do for you*, I will do indeed all that is to be done, but yet it shall be by means of your prayers; Christ did great works when he was upon the earth, but for him to do whatsoever a poor sinful creature shall desire him to do, what greater work of wonder can there be then this? *This is our confidence* (saith the Apostle) *that whatever we ask according to his will, he heareth us*, 1 Joh. 5. 15. The greatest question here will be, what are those prayers the Lord Jesus will hear? I confess many things are excellently spoken this way, yet I conceive the meaning of this great Charter is fully expressed in those words, *In my name*. If they be prayers in Christs name, they shall be heard, and it contains these three things.

1. To pray in Christs name, is to pray with reliance upon the grace, favour, and worthiness of the merits of Christ, thus this phrase is used, *to walk in the name of their God*, is in confidence of the authority, and excellency and favour of their Gods, that they will bear them out in it; so to pray in Christs name or to pray for Christs sake, is to pray for Christs sake thus, *Ephes. 2. 18. Through him* (i. through his death and sanctification rested upon) *we have access with confidence unto the Father*, Eph. 3. 12. *In whom we have boldness, and access with confidence, by the faith of him*. There are three evils that commonly

commonly attend our prayer, when we see God indeed.

1. Shame and flight from God, the Apostle saith therefore, that *by faith in Christ we have access.*

2. If we do accede and draw near to him, there is a secret fear and straintness of spirit to open all our minds; therefore saith he, *We have boldness*, the word signifies *liberty of speech*, to open all our minds without fear or discouragement.

3. After we have thus drawn near, and opened all our desires and moans before God, we have many doubts, *viz.* will the Lord hear such a sinner, and such weak, and imperfect and sinful prayers? and therefore he also affirms, that we have *confidence* and assurance of being heard; but all this is *by faith in him*: for look as Christ hath purchased all blessing for us by his death, and hence makes his intercession for those things daily according to our need: So we are much more to rest upon, and make that satisfaction, the ground of our intercession; because Christs blood purchased this, therefore O Lord grant this.

2. To pray in his name, is to pray from his command, and according to his will; as when we send another in our name, we wish him to say thus, Tell him, that I desire such a thing of him, and that I sent you; so it is here, and thus the phrase signifies: *John 5. 43. I am come in my Fathers name, i.e.*

By

By this authority and command,

To pray in Christs name therefore, is to pray according to the will of Christ, and from the will of Christ, when we take those words the Lord puts into our mouths, *Hos. 14. 1, 2, 3.* and desire those things only that the Lord commands to seek; whether absolutely or conditionally, according to his will revealed, and with submission to his will concealed, *1 Jo. 5. 14.* *What ever we ask according to his will he hears us*, *Pf. 27. 8.* *Ro. 8. 26.* If you ask any thing not according to Gods will, you come in your own name, he sent you not with any such message to the Father.

3. To pray in his name is to pray for his ends, for the sake and use of Christ, and glory of Christ, thus the phrase is used, *Mat. 18. 41, 42.* *To receive a Prophet in the name of a Prophet*, i. for this end and reason, *because he is a Prophet.* A servant comes in his masters name to ask something of another, when he comes as from his command, so also for his masters use: So when we pray for Christs sake, i. for his ends, not our own; these ever prevail, *Jam. 4. 3.* *You ask and have not, because you ask amiss, so spend it on your lusts*, *Joh. 12. 27, 28.* *Psal. 145. 18.* this is to ask in truth, to ask for a spiritual end; to make it our utmost end, ariseth from a special, peculiar, supernatural presence of the Spirit of life: and consequently a Spirit of Prayer which is ever heard. And hence



hence you that observe, the least groan for Christs ends is ever heard; because it is the groaning of the Spirit, because it is an act of spiritual life, the formality of which consists in this, that it is *for God*, Gal. 2: 19. the Lord cannot deny what we pray for Christs ends, because then he should crush Christs glory: and therefore let a Christian observe when he would have any thing of God that concerns himself, not to be solicitous so much for the thing, as to gain favour and nearness to God, and a heart subject unto God in a humble contentedness, to be denied as well as to be heard, and he shall undoubtedly find the thing it self; a lust is properly such a desire (though for lawful things) wherein a man must have the thing because it pleaseth him, as when *Rachel* asked for children; she must have them, else she must needs dye: *Give us water that we may drink* was their brutish cry, Ex. 17. 1, 2. not that we may live to him that gives it: holy prayers or desires (opposed unto lusts) are such desires of the soul, left with God, with submission to his will, as may best please him: now the Lord will hear the desires indeed of all that fear him, but not fulfil their lusts.

These three are the essential properties of such Prayer as is heard, or if you will, of that which is properly or spiritually prayer: fervency and assurance, &c. are excellent ingredients, but yet the Lord may hear prayer without them: it is true, the Lord may some-  
times

times not hear us presently, for our praying time is our sowing time, we must not look presently for the harvest. *The Lord hears the prayer of the destitute*, Psa. 102. 17. the original word is, of the *shrub*, or *naked place of the desert*, which the Prophet saith, Jer. 17. 6. *sees no good when good comes*; yet such as feel themselves such, the Lord doth regard them, and will have a time to answer them: and though the Lord may not give us the thing we pray for, nor as good a thing of the same kind, yet he ever gives us the end of our prayers; he that is at Sea, and wants stiffe winds to carry him to his Port, yet hath no cause to complain, if the Lord secretly carries him in by a strong current of the Sea it self; and it is certain at the end of all Gods dealing with you, you shall then see how the Lord hath not failed to answer you in any one particular, Jos. 23. 14. Oh therefore see and be perswaded of this your privilege, that God will now hear every prayer: many make a question, How may we know when the Lord grants out any blessing as an answer to prayer? many things are said to this purpose; but the simplicity and plainness of the answer lies in this, viz. if it be a prayer God hears it; if it be put up in Christs name, it is then a prayer; and that you may believe this, and glory in this, consider these reasons to confirm this truth.

From the promise of Christ as in this place Jo. 14. 13, 14. which was a promise in speci-

it to be accomplished when he came to his Kingdome; and therefore though it is true, Gods grace is free, and therefore you think the Lord may as well refuse to hear you, as hear; yet consider that by his promise, he hath bound himself to hear.

2. From the Fatherly disposition that is in God, *Jo. 16. 26, 27.* and hence *he loves us*, and hence cannot but hear us.

3. Because all prayers put up in Christs name, *Christ makes intercession* that they may be heard, *Heb. 7. 25.* he hath laid down his blood that all our prayers might be heard (as we have proved) and indeed hence arise the infinite efficacie of prayer, because it is built upon that which is infinitely and eternally worthy.

4. Because all prayers of the faithful arise from the Spirit of prayer, *Rom. 8. 26.* because as that which is for the flesh is of the flesh; so that which is for the Spirit or for the sake of Christ, for spiritual ends, is ever of the Spirit, *Joh. 7. 18.*

5. Because of the glory of Christ, that the Father may be glorified in the Son: Can not Christ be glorified unless he hear all prayers? yes he could, but yet his will is to reveal his glory by this means? so that though thou and thy prayers be vile, and therefore deservest no acceptance, or answer; yet remember that his glory is dear; it is the glory of Kings to hear some Requests and Petitions; but they cannot hear  
nor

not answer all ; it is the glory of Christ to bear all because he is able, without the least dishonour to himself thus to do, Oh be persuaded of this , how should your joy then be full ? how should you then delight to be oft with him ? how would you then encourage all to come unto him ? how would you then be constrained to do any thing for him who is ready to do all for you ? but oh, woe unto our unbelief, for that which (the Apostle saith, 1 *Joh. 5. 14.*) was the ground of his confidence, *viz.* that *whatever we ask according to his will, he hears us*, is no ground to us ; and we may say and mourn to think, this is our diffidence, that what ever I ask according to Christs will, he hears me not : but oh ! recover from such a distrustful frame, and from all dead-heartedness in this duty *wisely*, lest the Lord send task-masters and double our bricks, and then we groan, and sigh, and cry, and learn to pray that way, that will not pray nor believe now. If the Lord will but give us hearts, assuredly you might not onely rule your selves and families, but by the power of prayer pull down, and raise up Kingdoms, dispose of the greatest affairs of the Church, nay of the world, you might hereby work wonders, by means of him who ruling all things, yet is overcome by prayer, *Hos. 12. 4. 5.*

SECT.

## SECT. VI.

Sixthly, *Glorification.*

**T**His is the sixth and last privilege and benefit, and you all know, is the last thing in the execution of Gods eternal purpose toward all his beloved and chosen ones whom he hath predestinated, called, justified, whom he hath also glorified, *Rom. 8. 30.* hereby we are made perfect in holiness, no more sin shall stir in us; perfect also in happiness, no more tears, nor sorrows, nor temptations, nor fears shall ever molest us, *Heb. 12. 13. Rev. 14. 13.* and all this shall be in our immediate communion with God in Christ, *Col. 1. 18. Joh. 17. 23, 24.* we shall be, then saith Paul, for ever with the Lord: If the Lord would but open our eyes, and give us one glimpse of this, what manner of persons should we be? how should we then live? how willingly then should we embrace faggots, flames, prisons, and penury? the light afflictions here, would not they work for us glory? nay, the Apostle useth such a phrase, which I believe may pose the most curious Orator in the world to express the life of it, *an exceeding weight of glory, 2 Cor. 4. 17.* What is our life now but a continual dying, carrying daily about us that which is more bitter then a thousand deaths; what saith the Apostle? *You are dead*

dead, yet when Christ shall appear you shall appear with him in glory; the general security of these times foretold by Christ (especially when Churches become virgins, and people are seeking after purity of Ordinances) it shall not be in a want of watchfulness against the present corruptions of the times, as in a careless want of expectation of the coming of Christ in glory, not having *our loyns girt, and lamps burning*, nor readiness to meet the Lord in glory, *Mat. 25. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. &c.* Oh that I were able therefore to give you a blush, and a dark view of this glory, that might raise up our hearts to this work.

1. Consider the glory of the place: the Jews did and do dream still of an earthly Kingdome, at the coming of their *Messiah*; the Lord dasheth those dreams and tels them, *His kingdom is not of this world*, and that he went away to prepare a place for them, *that where he is they might be*, *Joh. 14. 2, 3.* and he wish him to see his glory, *Joh. 17. 23, 24.* the place shall be *the third heaven*, called *Our Fathers house*, built by his own hand with most exquisite wisdom, fit for so great a God to appear in his glory (*Joh. 14. 2, 3.*) to all his dear children; called also a *Kingdom*, *Mat. 25. 31.* *Come ye blessed inherit the Kingdom prepared for you*, which is the top of all the worldly excellencie, called also an *inheritance*, *1 Pet. 1. 3.* which the holy Apostle infinitely blesteth God for, as being  
our

our own, and freely given to us, being our Fathers inheritance divided among his Sons; which is a greater priviledge then to be born an heir to all the richest inheritance on this earth, or to be Lord of all this visible world: for this inheritance he tells us is,

1. *Incorruptible*, whereas all this world waxeth old as a garment,

2. *'Tis undefiled*, never yet polluted with any sin, no not by the Angels that fell, for they fell in paradise, when guardians to man; whereas this whole creation groaneth under burden and bondage of corruption, Rom. 8.

3. This never fadeth away; 'tis not like flowers, whose glory and beauty soon wither, but this shall be most pleasant, sweet; and ever delightful; after we have been ten thousand years in it, as it was the first day we entered into it (for this is the meaning of the word, and so it differs from incorruptible) whereas in this world (suppose a man should ever enjoy it, yet) there grows a secret satiety and fulness upon our hearts, and it grows common, & blessings of greatest price are not so sweet as the first time we enjoy them; they clog the stomach, and glut the soul; but here our eyes, ears, minds, hearts shall be ever ravished with that admirable glory which shines brighter then ten thousand Suns, the very fabrick of it being Gods needle-work (if I may so say) quilted with variety of all flowers; in divers colours, by the exactest art of God himself, as the Apostle intimates.

*Heb. 11.*

U

Se-

10.

Secondly, consider of the glory of the bodies of the Saints in this place; the Lord shall change our *vile* bodies, which are but as dirt upon our wings, and clogs at our feet, as the Apostle expresseth it, *Phil. 3. ult.* Paul was in the third heaven, and saw the glory doubtless of some there, see what he saith of them *1 Cor. 15. 42, 43, 44.*

1. It shall be an incorruptible body, it shall never dye nor rot again, no nor in the least degree tending that way, it shall never grow weary (as now 'tis by hard labour, and sometimes by holy duties) nor faint, nor grow wrinckled nor withered. *Adams* body in innocency *potuit non mori*, we say truly; but this *non potest mori*, it cannot dye; and hence it is that there shall be no more sickness, pains, griefs, faintings, fits, &c. when it comes there.

2. It shall be a glorious body, it shall *rise in honour* saith Paul; and what glory shall it have? verily it shall be *like unto Christs glorious body*, *Phil. 3. ult.* which when Paul saw, *Acts 9.* did shine *brighter then the Sun*; and therefore here shall be no imperfection of limbs, scars, or maims, natural or accidental deformities; but as the third heaven it self is most lightsome, *Gen. 1. 1, 2.* so their bodies that inhabits that shall exceed the light and glory thereof, these being more compacted, and thence shining out in greater lustre, that the eyes of all beholders shall be infinitely ravished, to see such clods of earth



earth as now we are, advanced to such incomparable beauty and amiableness of heavenly glory. 3. It shall be a *powerful strong body*; *It is sown in weakness*, saith Paul, *it shall rise in power*; it shall be able to help forward the divine operations of the soul, which are now clogg'd by a feeble body; it shall be able to bear the weight of glory, the joy unspeakable and full of glory, which our weak bodies cannot long endure here; but we begin to burst and break in pieces (like vessels full of strong spirits) with the waight and working of them; and therefore the Lord in mercy keeps us short now of what else we should feel; it shall be able to sing *Hallelujahs* and give honour, glory, power to the Lambe that sits upon the Throne for ever more without the least weariness.

4. It shall be a spiritual body, our bodies now are acted by animal spirits, and being earthly and natural, grows, feeds, eats, drinks, sleeps, and hath natural affections and desires after these things, and is troubled if it wants them; but then these same bodies shall live by the indwelling of the Spirit of God, poured out abundantly in us, and upon us, and so acting our bodies, and swallowing up all such natural affections and motions as those be here; as *Moses* being with God in the Mount forty days and nights, did not need any meat or drink, the Lord and his glory being all unto him; how much more shall it be thus then? I do not say we shall be spi-

ings like the Angels, but our bodies shall be spiritual, having no natural desires after any earthly blessing, food, raiment, &c. nor troubled with the want of them; and hence also the body shall be able as well to ascend up as now it is to descend down; as *Austin* shews by a similitude of lead, which some Artists can beat so small as to make it swim; we are now earthly, and made to live on this earth, and hence fall down to the center; but we are made then to be above for ever with the Lord, the Lord proceeding from imperfection to perfection, as the Apostle here shews; not first *spiritual*, and then *natural*; but first that which is natural (in this life) and then that which is spiritual.

3. Consider the glory of the soul; now we know but in part, and see but in part; now we have joy at sometimes, and then eclipses befall us on a sudden; but then *the Lord shall be our everlasting light*, *Isa. 60. 19.* then we shall see God face to face, *1 Jo. 3. 1, 2.* we shall then know and see those things that have been hid, not only from the wicked, but from the deepest thoughts of the Saints themselves in this world, *2 Cor. 12. 4.* *Paul* saw some things not fit to be uttered or that he could not utter: we shall be swallowed up in those depths of grace, glory, immediate vision, God shall be all in all.

The soul shall now enjoy,

1. The accomplishment of all promises, which we see not here made good unto us,

*1 Cor.*

1 Cor. 15. 24. then you shall have restitution of all these at times of refreshing, wherein your sins shall be publickly blot-  
 ed out from the presence of the Lord, *Acts*  
 3. 19. If *Joshua* said, when the peoples war-  
 fare was ended, *See if the Lord hath been*  
*wanting in one word to you*, *Jos.* 23. 14. much  
 more will the Lord Jesus say unto you then.

2. Then you shall receive a full answer to  
 all your prayers, all that grace, holiness, pow-  
 er over sin, Satan, fellowship with God, life  
 of Christ, blessing of God, which you sought  
 for, and wept for, and suffered for here, you  
 shall then see all answered.

3. Then you shall find the comfort of all  
 that you have done for God, *Rev.* 14. 13.  
 your *work* in this sense *shall follow you*, you  
 shall then infinitely rejoyce, that ever you  
 did any thing for God, hat ever you thought  
 of him, spake to him, or spake for him, that  
 ever you gave any one blow to your pride,  
 passions, lust, natural concupiscence, &c.  
 you shall then enjoy the reward of all your  
 sufferings, cares, sorrows, for God, Christ,  
 fastings, and dayes of mourning, whether  
 publickly, or secretly for Gods people, 2  
 Cor. 4. 17. the same glory God hath given  
 Christ, the Lord shall at that time give unto  
 you, *Joh.* 17. 22. It shall not be with us there  
 as it was with the wicked Israelites, who  
 when they came into the good land of rest,  
 they then forgot the Lord and all his works  
 past; no, no, all that which God hath done for

you in this world; you shall then look back, and see, and wonder, and love, and bleſs, and ſuck the ſweet of, for ever more; it's a fond weak queſtion to think whether we ſhall know one another in heaven; verily you ſhall remember the good the Lord did you here, by what means the Lord humbled you, by what miniſtry the Lord called you, by what friends the Lord comforted and reſreſhed you; and there you ſhall ſee them with you; do you think you ſhall forget the Lord and his works in heaven, which (it may be) you took little notice of, and the Lord had little glory for here?

Fourthly, Conſider the glory of the company and fellowſhip you ſhall have here.

1. Angels, *Heb. 12. 23, 24.* they will love you, and comfort you, and rejoyce with you, and ſpeak of the great things the Lord hath done for you, as they did on earth to the Shepherds, *Luk. 2. 10.* Be not afraid, ſaith the Angel, *Mat. 28. 5.* I know you ſeek Jeſus: So will they ſay then, be ever comforted you bleſſed ſervants of the Lord, for we know you are loved of the Lord Jeſus.

2. Saints, you ſhall ſit down with *Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob* in the Kingdom of God, be taken into the boſome of *Abraham*, and there we ſhall ſpeak with them of the Lords wonders, of his Chriſt and Kingdom, *Pſal. 145. 11.* and every ſentence and word ſhall be milk and honey, ſweeter then thy life now can be unto thee; we ſhall know

know and love and honour one another exceedingly.

3. The man Christ Jesus; when *Mary* clasped about him, *Jo. 20. 17.* Let me alone said he, touch me not, I am not yet ascended to my Father. As if he had said (*saith Austin*) then shall be the place and time wherein we shall embrace one another for ever more. Never was husband and loving wife so familiar one with another, as the Lord Jesus will be (not carnally and in an earthly manner) but in a most heavenly, glorious, yet gracious manner with all his Saints; *Come ye blessed,* will he then say to them; we shall then ever be, not only in the Lord, but with the Lord, *saith Paul, 1 Thess. 4. ult. & 5. 10.* Just as *Moses* and *Elias* in his transfiguration, that talked with him (which was a glimpse of our future glory) so shall we then, *Luk. 12. 37.* and you shall then see that love of his, that blessed bosome of love opened fully, which the Apostle saith, *passerh knowledge, Eph. 3. 19.* I need not tell you of your fellowship with the Father, also when the Son shall give up the Kingdom to him, that he may be all in all.

Fifthly, Consider the glory of your work there; which is only to glorifie this God.

1. You shall then live like Christ in glory, we shall think and speak all with glory, *1 Jo. 3. 1, 2.* our strings shall be then raised up to the highest strain of sweet melody and glory.

2. You shall then bless him, *Eph. 1. 6.*  
*Eph. 4. 30.* and that with ravishment; you  
shall come then to the full acknowledgment  
of the Son of God; you shall see and say, all  
this is the work and grace of Christ, and  
then shall cry out, Oh let all Angels, Saints,  
ever bless him for this. What should I speak  
any more? You will say, Is this certain?  
Can this be so? Yes assuredly, for Christ is  
gone to prepare this place, and glory for you,  
*Joh. 14. 2, 3.* We have also the first fruits  
of this glory, which we feel sometimes,  
whereby we see, and taste, and drink, & long  
for more of that joy unspeakable, and peace  
that passeth understanding, that triumph over  
the rage and working power of remaining  
corruption, that dark vision of God, and holy  
glorying and boasting in him, as our ever-  
lasting portion, &c. which cannot be delusi-  
ons and dreams which never feed, but ever  
leave the deceived soul hungry, but are rea-  
lities and things indeed, which satiate the  
weary soul, and fill it up with the very *fullness*  
of God himself, and therefore tis certain that  
we shall have the harvest, that thus taste of  
the fruits, and the whole sum paid us faith-  
fully, that have already the earnest penny.  
The Lord also fits us for this, as the Apostle  
disputes, *2 Cor. 5. 4, 5.* What means the Lord  
to deny our requests in many things as long  
as we live? What is his meaning not to let  
us see the accomplishment of many of his  
promises? is it because he is unfaithful? or  
because

because he would let us know there is a day of refreshing he hath reserved for us, and would have us look for, wherein we shall see it hath not been a vain thing for us to pray, or him to promise? why doth he afflict us, and keep us more miserable both by outward sorrows and inward miseries than any other people in the world? doth he not hereby humble us, empty us, wean us from, and make us, as it were, vessels bigge enough to hold glory, which we hope for in another world?

But you will say, *Can this glory be thus great? We see 'tis certain it shall be so; but shall it be so, exceeding great and endless?*

Yes verily, because,

1. The price is great which is paid for it, *Eph. 1. 14.* 'tis a *purchased possession* (by the blood of Christ, we enter into the holy of holies) a price of infinite value must bring a kind of infinite glory.

2. We are by Christ nearer to God than Angels are, whose glory we see is very great.

3. Shall not our glory be to set out the glory of Christ? *2 Thess. 1. 10.* and if so, then if his glory be exceeding great, ours must bear a due proportion, & be very great also.

4. Doth not God pick out the poor and vile things of the world, to be vessels of glory? *1 Cor. 1. 27.* and is not that an argument that he intends exceedingly to glorifie himself on such; to raise up a most glorious

glorious building, where he lays so low a foundation?

5. Are not we loved with the same love as he hath loved Christ? *John 17. ult.* and shall not our glory abound then exceedingly?

6. Is not the torment and shame of the Reprobates to be exceeding great and grievous? doth not God raise them up to make his power known? *Rom. 9. 23.* What then shall we think on the contrary of the glory of the Saints, wherein the Lord shall set forth his power in glorifying them, as he doth the glory of his power in punishing others? and therefore, *2 Thess. 1. 9.* the punishment of the wicked is exprest by separation of them *from the glory of the Lords power*; because that in the glory of the Saints the Lord will (as I may so say) make them as glorious as by his power ruled by wisdom he is able to make them. This is therefore the great glory of all those whom God hath called to the fellowship of his dear Son; and which is yet more, blessed be God the time is not long, but that we shall feel what now we do but hear of, and see but a little of, as we use to do of things afar off; we are here but strangers, and have no abiding city, we look for this that hath foundations; and therefore let sin press us down, and weary us out with wrestling with it; let Satan tempt, and cast his darts at us; let our drink be our tears day and night, and our meat gall and worm-wood;



wood; let us be shut up in choking prisons, and cast out for dead in the streets, nay upon dung-hills, and none to bury us, let us live alone as Pelicans in the wilderness, and be driven among wild beasts into deserts; let us be scourged and disgraced, stoned, sawn asunder, and burned; let us live in sheep-skins and goat-skins, destitute, afflicted, tormented (as who looks not for such days shortly) yet O brethren, the time is not long, but when we are at the worst, and death ready to swallow us up, we shall cry out, O glory, glory, O welcome glory. If our miseries here be long, they shall be light; if very bitter, they shall be short; however, long or short, they cannot be to us long, who look for an eternal weight of glory. Who would not (that considers of these things) despise this world, and set it at his heels, who hath all these privileges and benefits with Christ in his eye? Who would not abhor a filthy lust, to enjoy such a Christ? Who would ever look back to his fish-pots, or fathers house that hath such welcome made him the first moment he comes to the Lord Jesus, in having present fruition of some of these benefits, but present right unto all; fruition of some by feeling, of all by faith. But oh the wrath of God upon these times, that either see not this glory, or if they do, despise so great salvation! Christ, pardon, peace, adoption, grace, and glory is brought home to our doors, but their price is fallen in our market,

market, and we think it better to be without Christ with our lusts, then to be in Christ with his benefits. The *reproach of Christ* was dearer to *Moses* (as great a Courtier, and as strong a head-piece as our times can afford) then *all the riches and honours of Egypt*, but the grace, and peace, and life, and glory of *Jesus Christ*, is viler to us then the very onyons, and leeks, and flesh-pots of *Egypt*; if you had but naked Christ (our life) for a prey in these evil times, you had no cause to complain, but infinitely to rejoyce in your portion; but when with Christ you shall find all these benefits, and priviledges coming in as to your portion, and yet to despise him: Assuredly the Lord will not bear with this contempt alway: Away to the mountains, and hasten from the towns and cities of your habitation, where the grace of Christ is published, but universally despised, you blessed called ones of the Lord *Jesus*; for the days are comming, wherein for this sin the heavens and earth shall shake, the Sun shall be turned into darkness, and the Moon into blood, and mens hearts failing for fear of the horrible plagues which are coming upon the face of the earth. Dream not of fair weather, expect not better days, till you hear men say, *Blessed is he that commeth in the name of the Lord*, who thus blesseth his with all his spiritual blessings in Christ, Eph. 1. 3. I now proceed to the last.

## CHAP. III:

All those that are translated into this blessed estate, are bound to live the life of love in fruitful and thankful obedience unto him, that hath called them according to the rule of the moral Law, *Pla. 40. 7 & 8.*

**T**He Lord doth no sooner call his people to himself, but as soon as ever he hath thus crowned them with these glorious privileges, and given them any sense and feeling of them, but they immediately cry out, *Oh Lord, What shall I now do for thee? how shall I now live to thee?* they know now they are no more their own, but his, and therefore should now live to him. If you ask *Moses*, after all the love and kindness the Lord had shewn *Israel*, what *Israel* should do for him? you shall see his answer full, *Deut. 10. 12, 13.* And now, *Oh Israel*, what doth the Lord require of thee, but to fear the Lord thy God, and to love him and serve him with all thy heart, and to keep his Commandments, which I command thee this day for thy good? If you ask *Paul* (as Evangelical a Christian as ever lived) what now we are to do when we are in Christ? He answers punctually, *2 Cor. 5. 14, 15.* The Love of Christ constraineth us, because we thus judge, that Christ dying for those that were dead, they that live should

not

not live unto themselves, but unto him that died for them, and rose again. If we ask Peter the question, to what end the Lord hath called us out of darkness into his marvellous light? he expressly tells you, It is to shew forth the virtues of him that hath so called us, 1 Pet. 2.9. If we be doubtful whether this be the Lords mind, the Lord himself resolves it by Zachary, Luk. 1.74. and tells us, that 'tis his oath, That we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies, we should serve him without fear in holiness (in all the rules of the first Table) and righteousness (in all duties of the second Table) all the days of our life, and that all this should not be out of a spirit of bondage and slavish fear, but without fear, i.e. Fear of our enemies, sin, death, wrath, and so consequently out of love to him that hath deliv'ed us; that one would wonder it should ever enter the heart of any Christian man that hath tasted the love of Christ, as to think that there is no use of the Law to one in Christ; and that because they are to live the life of love to Christ, that therefore they are not to look to the Law as the rule of their love, expressly cross to the letter of the text, Job. 14. 15. *If ye love me, keep my commandments*, which commandments are not only faith & love to the Saints but love to enemies, and spiritual obedience unto the moral law, in a far different manner and measure then as the Pharisees instructed the people in those days; as you may

see, *Mat. 5. 17.* 'Tis true indeed, obedience to the Law is not required of us now, as it was of *Adam*; it was required of him, as a condition antecedent to life, but of those that be in Christ it is required only as a duty consequent to life, or as a rule of life, that seeing he hath purchased our lives in redemption, and actually given us life in vocation and sanctification, we should now live unto him, in all thankful and fruitful obedience, according to his will revealed in the moral Law.

'Tis a vain thing to imagine that our obedience is to have no other rule but the Spirit, without any attendance to the Law; the Spirit indeed is the efficient cause of our obedience, and hence we are said to be led by the Spirit, *Ro. 8. 14.* but it is not properly the rule of our obedience, but the will of God revealed in his Word, especially in the Law is the rule: the Spirit is the wind that drives us in our obedience; the Law is our Compass, according to which it steers our course for us; the Spirit and the Law, the Wind and the Compass can stand well together, *Psal. 143. 10.* *Teach me to do thy will O God* (there is *David's* rule, viz. Gods will revealed) *thy spirit is good* (there is *David's* wind that enabled him to steer his course according to it) *the spirit of life doth free us from the Law of sin and death*, but not from the holy, and pure, and good, and righteous Law of God, *Rom. 8. 1, 2, 3.* *The blood of Christ by the Spirit cleanseth us from dead works,*

works, to serve the living God, Heb. 9. 14. not to serve our own selves, or lusts, or wills, to do what vs please : The Law indeed is not a rule of that by which we are to obey, viz. of our faith ; yet it is the only rule of what we are to obey : we are not to perform acts of obedience now, as *Adam* was to do, viz. by the sole power of inherent grace, but we are to live by faith, and act by faith (for without me you can do nothing, Jo. 15. 5.) we are not united to Christ our life by obedience, as *Adam* was to God by it, but by faith ; and therefore as all action (in living things comes from union, so all our acts of obedience are to come by faith, from the Spirit on Christs parts, and from faith on our part, which make our union. *Noah* built by faith, *Enoch* walked with God by faith, *Joshua* and his souldiers fought by faith, *Abraham* travelled, dwelt in his tents, lived and died by faith ; they acted according to the rule, but all by the power of faith. 'Tis a weak reasoning to imagine a man is not bound to pay his debts, because he is to go unto another for the money : Obedience is our debt we owe to Christ, *Duk.* 17. 10. though we are to go to Christ poor, and weak, and feeble, to enable us to pay : 'Tis true, Christ hath kept the Law for us, and are we therefore free from it as our rule ? No verily, Christ kept the Law for satisfaction to justice, and so we are not bound to keep the Law ; he kept the Law also for imitation, to give

give us a copy an example of all holiness & glorifying God in our obedience ; and thus Christs obedience is so far from exempting from the Law as that it engageth us the more, having both rule and exercise before us, 1 Jo. 2. 6. *He that saith he abideth in him, ought to walk as he walked*, 1 Pet. 1. 14, 15, 16. *is it not*, the Law is writ in a believers heart, and if he hath a Law within, what need he (say some) look to the Law without? when as our Saviour and David argued quite contrary, *Psal. 40. 7, 8. I come, I delight to do thy will, it being written of me that I should do it*, because *thy Law is within my heart*; this argues that you are not to attend the Law unwillingly, as bond-men and slaves, but willingly and gladly, because the Law, even the Law of love in your hearts, 1 Job. 5. 3. The place alledged by some for this liberty from the Law, viz. *The Law is not made for a righteous man*, 1 Tim. 1. 9. is well considered, fully dasheth this dream in pieces ; for there were divers Jewish Preachers of *Moses Law*, and they had a world of scruples and questions about it, ver. 4. and *Paul* and others were accounted of, as men less zealous, because they did not found upon that string so much ; away (saith *Paul*) with those contentious questions ; for the end of the Commandment is not scruples and questions, but charity and love (i.e. both to God and man) out of a pure heart & faith unfeigned, ver. 4. and saith he: *The Law is very good*

when used lawfully, that is, for this end, and out of these principles; ver. 8. 'tis not talking, but doing, and that out of love, which is the end and scope of the law; so that note by the way, you may as well abolish love as abolish the law, love being the end and scope of the Law.

But to proceed, *The Law is not made* (saith he) *for the righteous*, i.e. for the condemnation of the righteous, i.e. of such as out of a pure heart and faith unstained love God in the first Table; love to shew all duties of respect to man in the second Table; and therefore they of all other men have no cause to abolish the law, as if it was a bugbear, or a thing that could hurt them; but it is made for the condemnation of the *lawless Anomians* (as the original word is) or if you will *Antinomians* (transgressors of the first command) and *disobedient* (transgressors of the second command) for *ungodly* and *sinners* (transgressors of the third command) for *unholy & profane* (transgressors of the fourth command), for *murderers of fathers and mothers*, (of the fifth command,) for *man-slayers* (of the 6.) for *whoremongers and defilers of mankind* (of the 7.) for *man-stealers* (of the 8.) for *Lyars* (of the 9,) and for those that in any thing walk contrary to sound doctrine, the purity of the law and will of God (of the 10.) so that this place is far from favouring any of those that run in this charrell, of abolishing the Law as our Rule;  
No



No beloved, the love of Christ will constrain you to embrace it as a most precious treasure. It is the observation of some, that in the Preface to the Moral Law, Exa. 20. 1, 2. the Lord reveals himself to be *the Lord their God, that brought them out of the Land of Egypt*; the very scope of which words, perswade to a reverend receiving and keeping of that good Law: this Law all Nations are bound to observe, because he is *Jehovah the Lord*; but to be thy God in special Covenant, and that redeemed *the from Egypt*, and from that which was typified by it, this belongs to none but unto them especially that are the people of God; and therefore of all other people in the world, they are bound to receive it as their rule, for obedience doth not make us Gods people, *at God our God*: But he is first our God (which is only by the Covenant of Grace) and hence it is, that being ours, and we his, we, of all others, are most bound to obey.

To conclude, they that stick in these briars, therefore cry down the law as a Christians rule, because by this means a Christian shall find no peace, because he is continually sinning against this Law: the Law therefore by they, will be alwaies troubling of him.

I answer, First a corrupt heart and purd conscience can have no peace by the law, *Is. 57. 21. there is no peace to the wicked*, and it is good it should be so.

2. A watchful Christian may, *Psal. 119.*

15. *Great peace have they that keep thy Law.* Hezekia had it when he desired the Lord to remember how he had walked before him with a perfect heart, Isa. 58. 1, 2, 3. Paul found it, the testimony of his conscience bearing him witness, was his rejoicing *harkis*, 2 Corinth. 1. 12.

3. If a Christian ignorant of maintaining his peace with God by Faith in his justification, notwithstanding all the errors in his obedience and sanctification; If I say he wants his peace, shall we therefore break the Law in pieces? If a secure Christian, that walks loosely wants peace, by the accusation of the Law, 'tis Gods mercy to him to give him no peace in himself, while he is at truce with his lust.

4. That peace will end in dismal sorrow, which is got by kicking against the Law, it is but dawbing for a man to keep his peace by shutting his eyes against the way of peace: a servant may have peace in's idleness, by thinking his Master requires no work of him, and hiding his talent, yet what shall his Lord say to him when his day is ended, and he comes to reckon with him at sunset? bring the Law into thy conscience in point of justification, it will trouble conscience: for there only Christs righteousness, Gods grace, and the promise are to be looked on, and our own obedience and holiness laid up in the dust; but bring it before thee as a rule of thy sanctification, and as thy copy to write after  
and

and to imitate, and aspire after that perfection it requires, it will then trouble thee no more, then it doth a child, who having a fair copy set him to write after and knowing that he is a son, is not therefore troubled because he cannot write as fair as his copy; he knows if he imitates it, his scribbling shall be accepted: howsoever though his father may chastise him with rods, if he be careless to imitate, yet he will never cast him therefore off from being his Son. The truth is this, it argues a most graceless, carnal, wretched heart, for a man to cast by Gods rules, because attendance to them is his trouble and torment; which unto a gracious heart, are life, and peace, and sweetness, *All the ways of wisdom to him, are ways of pleasantness, and her paths peace*: And it is Gods common curse upon them that love not the truth in these days, that because sin is not their sorrow, nor breach of rules their trouble; that therefore the observation of the Law, attendance unto rules, shall be their burden and trouble, they feel not the plague in their own hearts, and therefore reproofs plague them, and commands are a plague and a torment unto them: crooked feet and crooked wills make them tread awry in such corrupt opinions.

All the called ones of God are therefore to live this life of obedience, and that out of love, which I call the life of love, *Gal. 5. 6.* for else circumcision avails not, nor uncir-

cumcision, no, nor faith it self, unless it be of this nature, as that it works by love: there is much obedience and external conformity to the Law in many men, but the principal difference between these formalities and the obedience of the Saints, is love; the obedience of the one ariseth from self-love, because it pleaseth themselves, and suits with their own ends; the other from the love of Christ, because it pleaseth him, and suits with his ends, 1 Cor. 13. 4. &c. 1. Job. 5. 3.

Quest.

Wherein doth and should this life of love appear?

Ans.

In these five particulars.

1. In thinking and musing much on Christ and upon his love, and on what you shall do for him; he that saith he loves another, and yet seldome thinks on him, or will seldome give him a good look when he meets him, certainly deceives himself; the least degree of love, appears in thinking on what we love because the loving kindness of God was *better* than life unto David; hence he did remember him upon his bed, and meditate on him in the very night, Psal. 63. 3, 6. they that fear the Lord, i. with a Son-like fear, where love is chiefly predominant, are such as think upon his name, Mal. 3. 16. *We have thought on thy loving kindness Oh Lord in thy Temple*, Psal. 48. 9. Thou that canst spend days, nights, weeks, months, years; and hast thy head all this time swarming with vain thoughts, and scarce one living thought of Christ and his

his

his love, that didst never bear thy head, nor trouble thy self in musing; Oh what shall I do for him: nor in condemning thy self because thou dost so little, verily thou hast not the least degree of this life of love.

2. In speaking and commending of him: Is it possible that any man should love another, and not commend him, nor speak of him? If thou hast but a Hawk or a Hound that thou lovest, thou wilt commend it, and can it stand with love to Christ, yet seldome or never to speak of him nor of his love; never to commend him unto others, that they may fall in love with him also? you shall see the Spouse, *Cant. 5. 9, 16.* when she was asked *what her beloved was above others?* she sets him out in every part of him, and concludes with this, *he is altogether lovely,* because thy loving kindness (saith David) *is better then life, my lips shall praise thee, and I will bless thee whiles I live, Psal. 63. 3, 4.* can it stand with this life of love to be alway speaking about worldly affairs, or news at the best; both week day, and Sabbath-day, in bed and at board, in good company and in bad, at home and abroad? I tell you it will be one main reason why you desire to live, that you may make the Lord Jesus known to your children, friends, acquaintance, that so in the ages to come his name might ring, and his memorial might be of sweet odour, from generation to generation *Pf. 71. 18.* If before thy conversion especially

hath poisoned others by thy vain and corrupt speeches; after thy conversion thou wilt seek to season the hearts of others by a gracious, sweet and wise communication of savory and blessed speeches; what the Lord hath taught thee thou wilt talk of it unto others, for the sake of him whom thou lovest.

3. In being oft in his company, and growing up thereby into a familiar acquaintance with him: can we be long absent from those we love intirely, if we may come to them? can we love Christ and yet be seldome with him, in Word, in Prayer, in Sacraments, in Christian Communion, in Mediation and daily examination of our own hearts, in his providencies of Mercies, Crosses, and Tryals? (for Christ is with us here, but those two ways, in his Ordinances, or Providences, by his holy Spirit) *Lord (saith David) I have loved the habitation of thy house, and the place where thine honour dwelleth, Psa. 26. 8.* The ground of which is set down, v.

*3. Thy loving kindness is before mine eyes, my soul longeth for thee as in a land where no water is, that I might see thee, as I have seen thee in the Sanctuary; the reason of it was, because thy loving kindness is better then life, Psa. 63. 1, 2.*

4. In doing much for him, and that willingly: Did not Jacob love Rachel? how did he express it? his seven years service, in frost and snow, in heat and cold, by day and night, were nothing to him, for her sake whom

whom he loved: Shall I serve the Lord (saith David) of what cost me nothing? And when he had prepared many millions for the building of the Temple, yet he accounted it a small thing for his sake whom he loved, 1 Chron. 29. 3. he gave it out of his poverty, as he speaks; *this is love to keep his Commandments, and those are not grievous*, 1 Joh. 5. 3.

5. In suffering and enduring any evil for his sake.

I confess it is not every degree of love that will carry a man hither; yet where there is great and singular love, for a good man one may be willing to dye, Rom. 5. 7. assuredly if there be any love to Christ, it will in time encrease to this measure, it will think ten thousand lives too little to lay down for Christs sake, that laid down his precious life for him: *What tell you me, saith Paul, of bonds and imprisonments? I am ready not only to be bound, but to dye for the sake of Christ at Jerusalem, my life is not dear to me, no more then a rush at my foot, that I may finish my course with joy: For thy sake we are killed all the day long*, Rom. 8. 36. I tell you the love of Christ will make you fall down upon your knees, and bless the Lord, and he wil accept of such a poor sacrifice as thy body is, though it be burnt to ashes; and thou wilt bless him again and again, that whereas he might have left thee in thy sins to have trodden him and his glory and grace underfoot,

as he hath done thousands in the world: yet that he should call thee to share in his honour, not only to do, but suffer for his sake:

Now the good Lord perswade all our hearts unto this fruitful obedience and life of love. Oh you young men, you have a fair time before you to much for Christ in; how pleasing will it be to him to see such young trees hang full of fruit! You aged men have now one foot in your grave; and you have forgotten the Lord Jesus most of your time, and your time which now remains is very little, and then your Lamp is out, your Sun is almost set, and all your work is yet to be done for Christ; Oh therefore awaken now at last, before you awake when it is too late; You rich men have abilities, and wherewithal to set forward Christs Kingdom in the Towns and Villages where you live; you poor men may do much by ardent and instant prayers day and night, for the advancement of the Lord Jesus. You Husbands, Wives, Masters, Servants, remember if you are not good in your places, you are not good at all, whatsoever your profession be; a good woman, but a froward wife; a good man, but a hair-brained curst husband; a good servant, but a very sore tongue; these cannot well stand together. If you have any love to Christ, the life of love will make you move best in your proper place: Oh therefore love much; and so think much, and speak much of, and converse much



much with, and do much, and suffer much, for the Lord Jesus Christ: content not your selves with doing small things for him, that hath done and suffered much for you; if you can do but little, yet set God on work by being fervent and frequent in prayer, not only that Christ may be honoured in your selves, but also in your families, and in all Churches, and Kingdoms of the world. If you cannot do much, yet maintain alive a will to do much, which is accepted as if you did, 2 Cor. 8. 12. If thou art a poor man, and hast nothing to give, yet keep a heart as liberal as a Prince; if you can do but little your selves, yet encourage others, that they may; thou art not a Preacher called to convert souls, yet do thou encourage the messengers of Christ in their work, by thy prayers, counsel, help, and at the last day thy conversion of souls shall be attributed unto thee, as well as unto them; if thou canst not do any good, yet prevent what evil thou canst in thy place; to keep off Judgments, at least to delay them; mourn thou for other mens sins, as if they were thine own, that so the Lord may pity and pardon them, and it may be convert them, who shall do more good it may be then ever thou canst do: let the Lord Jesus be in thy thoughts the first in the morning, and the last at night; do what thou canst; nay, go continually to him to enable thee to do more then thou of thy self canst; and mourn bitterly, and lament

ment daily what thou hast not done, either through want of ability or will; remembering his love to thee, that he came out of his Fathers bosome for thee, went for thee, bled for thee, powred out his life, nay, his soul to death for thee, is now risen for thee, gone to heaven for thee, sits at Gods right hand, and rules all the world for thee, makes intercession continually for thee, and at the end of the world will come again for thee, who hast loved him here, that thou mightest live for ever vvith him then. But is this *ay* life, in these evil and luke-warm times? How many be there that believe in Christ, that they may live as they list? If to drink, and whore, and scoff, and blaspheme; if to shake a lock, and follow every fond fashion; if to crosse and cringe before a piece of vvood; if to be vveary of the Word, and outvvardly zealous of long prayers; if to seek purity of Ordnaunces in Chutches, and to maintain impurity in hearts, in shops, in families; if to set our hearts upon Farms and Merchandizes, and so to be covetous; if to set up our own selves, and parts, and gifts, vvith a secret disdain of Gods Minuters; if to cry down learning, and set up ignorance; if to set up Christ, and destroy sanctification and obedience; if to be a sect-master of some od opinions; if to crack the nut of some superlunary & Monkish notions, and high-flown speculations; if to hear much and do little; if to have a name to live, and yet dead at the

the heart ; if this be to live the life of love, we have many that live this life ; the Lord Jesus wants no love, if this be to love : But oh vvoe unto you, if you thus require the Lord, foolish people and unwise !

The Lord knows we may complain as *Paul* did, *every man minds his own things, and not the things of Jesus Christ* ; none in comparison of that huge number that think they are religious enough, if they be baptized, and say that they believe in Jesus Christ : Verify the time draw near wherein the Lord will come for the fruits of his *Vineyard* ; and if he finds it not, assuredly he will not be beholding to us for obedience, he can raise his glory out of other people, and there carry his Gospel to them who shall bring forth the fruits of it ; the Lord will shortly lay his *Ax* unto the root of our tree ; and if we will not serve the Lord in this good Land, in the abundance of peace and mercy, we shall serve our enemies in hunger, cold, and nakedness ; if we will not serve him in love, we must serve our enemies in fear ; do not think that the Lord will be put off with venerable names and titles, shadows and pictures ; what is most mens profession at this day but a meer paint ? which may serve to colour them while they live, but will never comfort them (unless conscience be asleep) when they come to dye. Oh, take heed of such formality. I can never thinke enough of *David's* expression, *Psalms*

119. 167. *I have kept thy commandments, and I love them exceedingly*; should he not have said first, *I have loved thy commandments, and so have kept them*? Doubtless he did so, but he ran here in a most holy and heavenly circle, *I have kept them, and loved them*; and *loved them and kept them*; if we love Christ we shall live such a life of love in our measure; and his Commandments will be most dear, when himself is most precious.

# A TABLE of the Principal CONTENTS.

<b>A</b> Doption, what it is.	Page 275
The manner thereof.	274
<b>B</b> elievers in a blessed condition.	274
Conviction of sin wrought in every Believer.	14
What this sin is which the Lord convinceth of.	14
How the Lord doth convince the soul of sin.	14
What measure and degree of conviction God works in all his.	14
Conviction of sin to be first preached.	37
A sad thing to stand out against conviction.	37
Manner of conviction.	47
Compunction immediately follows conviction.	47
The necessity thereof.	49
Rules observable about compunction.	59
Wherein is doct.	59
What measure of compunction God works in the EMB.	85
How and where the Soul should come to Christ.	175
Measure of enabling the sinner come to Christ.	175
In what manner we should come to him.	225
What evil in sin God most affects the dearest withal.	90
A threefold evil of sin.	92
Fear of Gods displeasure necessary to conversion, and wherein it consists.	165
The nature of Faith.	175
The efficient cause thereof.	175
The subject matter of Faith.	175
The Form thereof.	175
The end of Faith.	175
The Ground and Means of Faith.	175
How to discern Faith from presumption.	167
Whether an absolute testimony of actual favour and justification be not the first ground of Faith.	222
<b>G</b> lorification, what it is.	333
Greatness of mens sin in not coming to Christ.	239
<b>H</b> umiliation for sin, what it is.	135
What need there is of it.	135
What	135

What measure of Humiliation is necessary.  
 (The measure of) Humiliation is necessary.

Christian is not justified before faith is sung by	101
What is that justification is	109
Who is it that justifieth, and why.	147
The means whereby the Father justifieth:	149
Whereas the person the Lord doth justify.	150
L.	154
Loosening from sin, how wrought in the Soul.	89
The life of Love requisite in Believers.	117
The life of Love appears in five things.	126
The Law not to be slighted.	131
How Christ doth save by his Power.	139
Answers of Prayers a special privilege.	149
What are those Prayers that Christ will hear.	159
Why God heareth Prayers.	169
A double Resistance of Grace in men.	171
Regenerate, and unregenerate, how distinguished.	179
Reconciliation with God, wherein it consists.	189
What is it to see sin.	197
Sense of mercy cannot turn a Soul to Christ without the sight of sin.	199
Sorrow for sin accompanies Conversion, wherein it consists.	201
Separation from sin wrought in Believers.	209
What true Sanctification is.	210
The benefits thereof.	216
U.	216
Union with Christ, goes before Communion with him.	101
Whether Vocation doth not go before justification.	103
Vocation is not all one with Sanctification.	113
The nature of true Vocation.	119
The necessity thereof.	120
How it is a ground of Faith.	126
W.	126
The Whole soul goes to Christ in conversion.	186
How to know when the Whole soul comes to Christ.	187

FINIS.

7  
9  
3  
9  
7  
9  
0  
4  
9  
7  
3  
1  
9  
4  
9  
0  
1  
0  
5  
7  
1  
7  
2  
4  
0  
3  
OF  
03  
13  
12  
02  
16  
36  
17